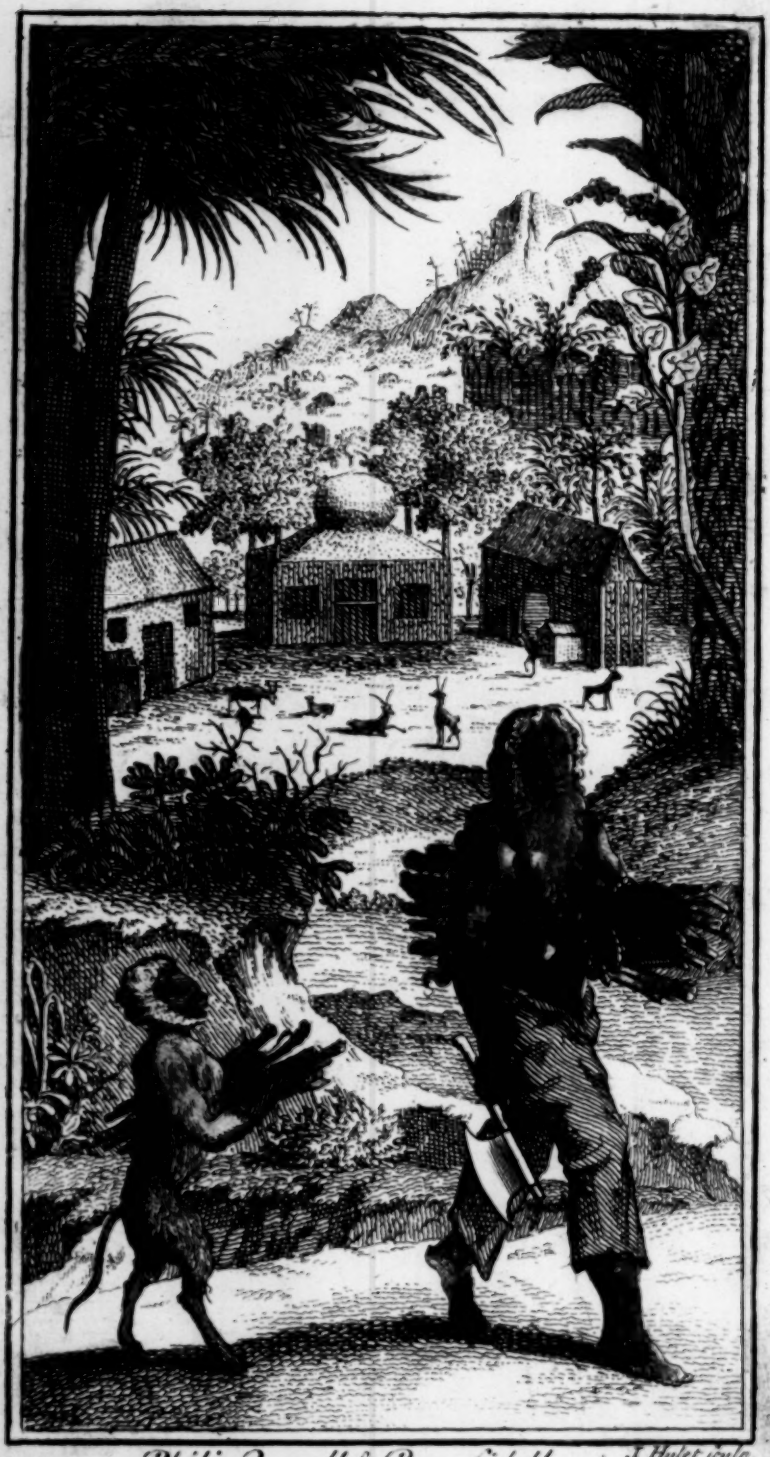
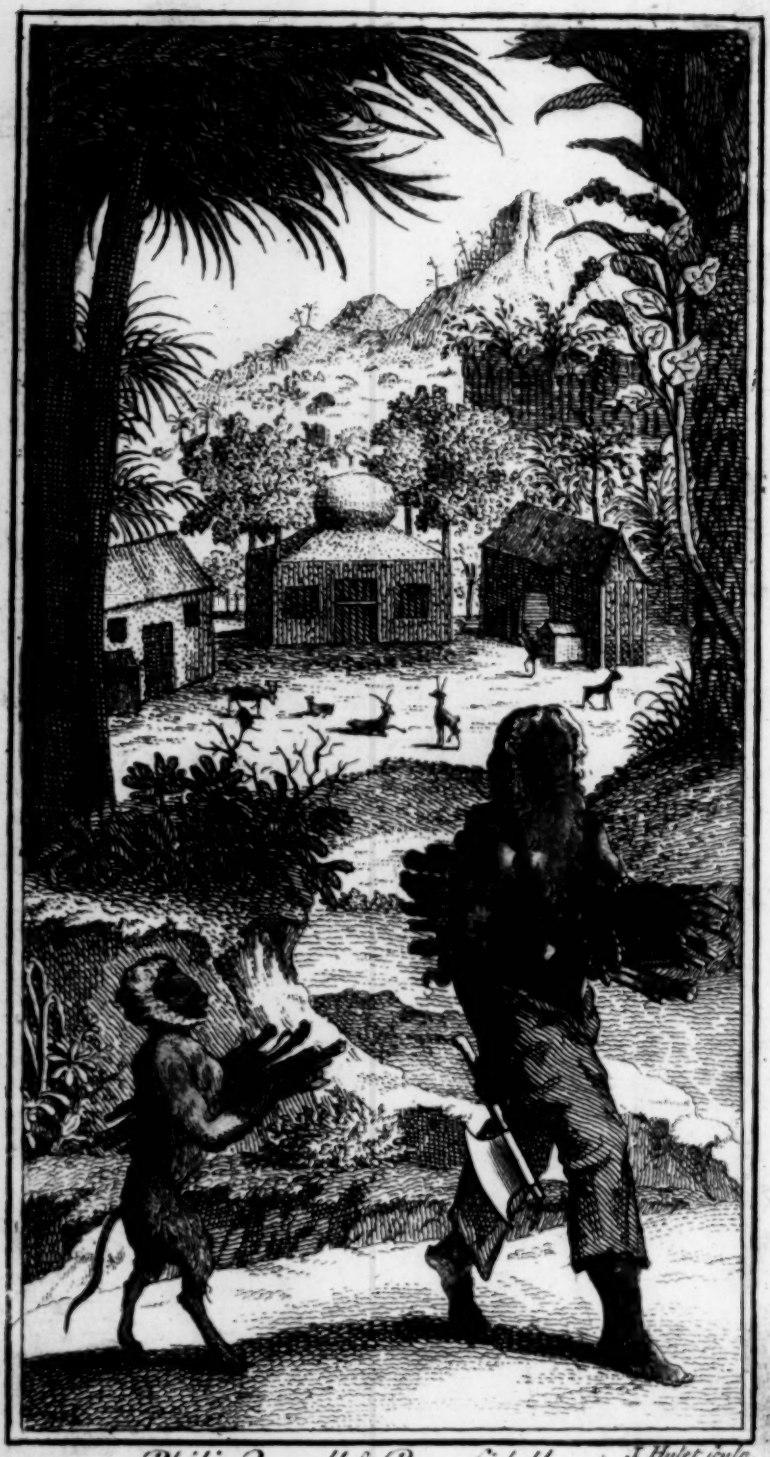


Philip Quarll & Beaufidell. *J. Hulet sculp.*



Philip Quarll & Beaufidell. *J. Hulet sculp.*

1485. k 20.

THE HERMIT:

Or, The Unparallel'd SUFFERINGS And Surprising ADVENTURES OF Mr. *PHILIP QUARLL*, An ENGLISHMAN:

Who was lately discovered by Mr. DORRINGTON, a *Bristol* Merchant, upon an uninhabited Island in the SOUTH-SEA; where he has lived above FIFTY YEARS, without any Human Assistance; still continues to reside, and will not come away.

CONTAINING,

I. His Conferences with Those who found him out; to whom he recites the most material Circumstances of his Life; as, that he was born in the Parish of *St. Giles*, educated by the charitable Contribution of a Lady, and put 'Prentice to a Locksmith.

II. How he left his Master, and was taken up with a notorious House-breaker, who was hanged; how, after his Escape, he went to Sea a Cabin-Boy, married a famous Whore, listed himself a common Soldier, turned Singing-master, and married three Wives, for which he was tried and condemned at the *Old-Baily*.

III. How he was pardoned by King CHARLES II. turned Merchant, and was shipwrecked on this desolate Island on the Coast of *Mexico*.

With a curious MAP of the ISLAND, and other CUTS.

LONDON:

Printed for J. WREN, near *Great Turn-Stile* in *Holborn*; J. JEFFERIES, at the *Bible and Crown* in *Ludgate-street*; and J. FULLER, at the *Bible* in *Butcher-Hall Lane*, 1751.

38

THE PREFACE.

TRUTH and *Fiction* have, of late, been ſo promiſcuouſly blended together, in Performances of this Nature; that, in the preſent Caſe, it ſeems abſolutely neceſſary to diſtinguiſh the *one* from the *other*. If *Robinſon Cruſoe*, *Moll Flanders*, and Colonel *Jack*, have had their Admirers among the lower Rank of Readers; it is as certain, that the Morality in Maſquerade, which may be diſcovered in the Travels of *Lemuel Gulliver*, has been an equal Entertainment to the ſuperior Claſs of Mankind.

Now it may, without the leaſt Arrogance, be affirmed, that, tho' this *ſurpriſing Narrative* be not ſo replete with

vulgar Stories as the former, or ſo interſperſed with a *Satirical* Vein, as the laſt of the above-mentioned Treatiſes; yet it is certainly of more Uſe to the Public, than either of them, becauſe every Incident, herein related, is real Matter of Fact. But becauſe my Share in this Work, is no other than that of a bare Editor; I think it my Duty to account for the Poſſeſſion of this Manuſcript.

It was put into my Hands, about a Year ago, by Mr. *Dorrington*, an eminent Merchant, with full Liberty to publiſh it when, and in what Manner, I thought moſt proper. I hope therefore it will not be deemed impertinent to give ſome Account of my Friend, as a Reputation to the Work itſelf.

" Mr. *Edward Dorrington* is deſcend-
" ed from a very antient and honourable
" Family in *Staffordſhire*. His Grand-
" father, Mr. *Joſeph Dorrington*, re-
" moved out of that County, to *Frome* in
" *Somerſetſhire*; his Employ was that of
" a very conſiderable Graſier: The Iſſue
" he left at his Deceaſe was one Son, *Ri-*
" *chard*

" *chard* (the Father of my Friend), and
" two Daughters. Mr. *Richard Dor-*
" *rington*, for ſome time, was a Student
" of *Gray's-Inn*; but, liking a Country-
" Life beſt, he having thoroughly qualified
" himſelf, retired to *Frome*, the above-
" mentioned Reſidence of his Father;
" where he married Mrs. *Margaret*
" *Groves*, of *Taunton*, a Gentlewoman
" of about a Thouſand Pounds Fortune.
" Soon after his Marriage, he went and
" ſettled at *Bath*, where the Integrity of
" his fair Practice ſoon rendered him
" eminent in his Profeſſion. He acquir'd
" a very competent Eſtate, and died in
" the Year 1708. having no other Iſſue
" than his only Son, the preſent Mr.
" *Edward Dorrington*, whom he had
" put to be bred a Merchant, under the
" Care of Mr. *Stephen Graham* of *Briſtol*.
" His Diligence, and courteous Behavi-
" our, during his Servitude, ſo highly
" recommended him to his Maſter's
" Eſteem, that, when his Time was ex-
" pired, he admitted him into a Moiety of
" his Commerce, married him to his
" Daughter, and gave her an handſome
" Portion ſuitable to his Merit.

" The Happineſs of my Acquaintance " with him began in his Apprenticeſhip; " and has, with the greateſt Satisfaction " to me, continued ever ſince."

As to the Genuineneſs of this Treatiſe, I am farther to aſſure the Reader, that as Mr. *Dorrington* is allowed, by all who know him, to be a Gentleman of unqueſtionable Veracity, and above attempting an Impoſition upon the Public; ſo the *firſt* Book herein was wholly written by himſelf, and the *ſecond* and *third* Books were faithfully tranſcribed from Mr. *Quarll*'s Parchment-Roll, which was a Continuation of what my Friend had begun.

When Mr. *Dorrington* undertook this Voyage, he ſet Sail, as is well known, from *Briſtol* to the *South-Sea*; and traded all along that Coaſt to *Mexico*, now called *New-Spain*.

And he is now making a ſecond Voyage to the ſame Places.

To proceed to the Work itſelf: The *firſt* Book contains a Relation of Mr. *Dorrington*'s

rington's Diſcovery of Mr. *Quarll*, his ſeveral Conferences with him, a Deſcription of the Iſland, and the Manner of our *Hermit*'s living there; with many other curious Particulars.

The *ſecond* and *third* Books are the Contents of the *Hermit*'s Parchment-Roll above-mentioned, and contain the moſt ſurpriſing, as well as various Turns of Fortune ever yet recounted in any Work of this Kind. And, altho' the continued Series of Misfortunes which attended him ſeemed to render his Life an Example of the moſt unhappy State of human Nature; yet we do not find ſo great an Enormity in his Actions, that Vengeance ſhould purſue him ſo cloſely by unparalleled Croſſes. If Polygamy could call down ſuch divine Reſentments, we muſt be ſilent; nor farther urge his Fate.

However, for this Fact he was brought to Juſtice by the Laws of his Country; and he accounts for the Inducements of his committing that Sin, at his Tryal. This Reflection therefore ſhould be wip'd off,

off, ſince he is now become the humbleſt of Penitents.

The Obſervations throughout theſe Sheets will be found to be modeſt, ſerious, and inſtructive, and all centre in the unerring Moral, that,

Whate'er we do, or whereſoe'er we're driv'n,
Still, we muſt own, ſuch is the Will of Heav'n.

To conclude: In the Publication of theſe Papers, I have diſcharged two Promiſes; the one made by Mr. *Dorrington* to the *Hermit*, and the other made by myſelf to Mr. *Dorrington:* And that they may meet with a Reception, as candid as they are uſeful, is the hearty Wiſh of

The Reader's Humble Servant,

P. L.

ON THE

HERMIT's SOLITUDE.

BEHOLD a Man in his *firſt Claſs* of Years,
When youthful Sports made way for growing Cares,
The chequer'd Fortunes of a manly Age,
Buſies reflecting Senſe with Thoughts more ſage:
Various Affairs will cauſe a World of Woes:
Then in the Fall of Life how ſweet's Repoſe!
The Calm, he now enjoys, makes full Amends
For all he felt; Heav'n never Ill intends;
Suff'rings are ſent to us from God above,
To make us practiſe Faith, and ſacred Love;
Aw'd into Patience, by freſh Scenes of Fate,
We live too ſoon, and learn to live too late.

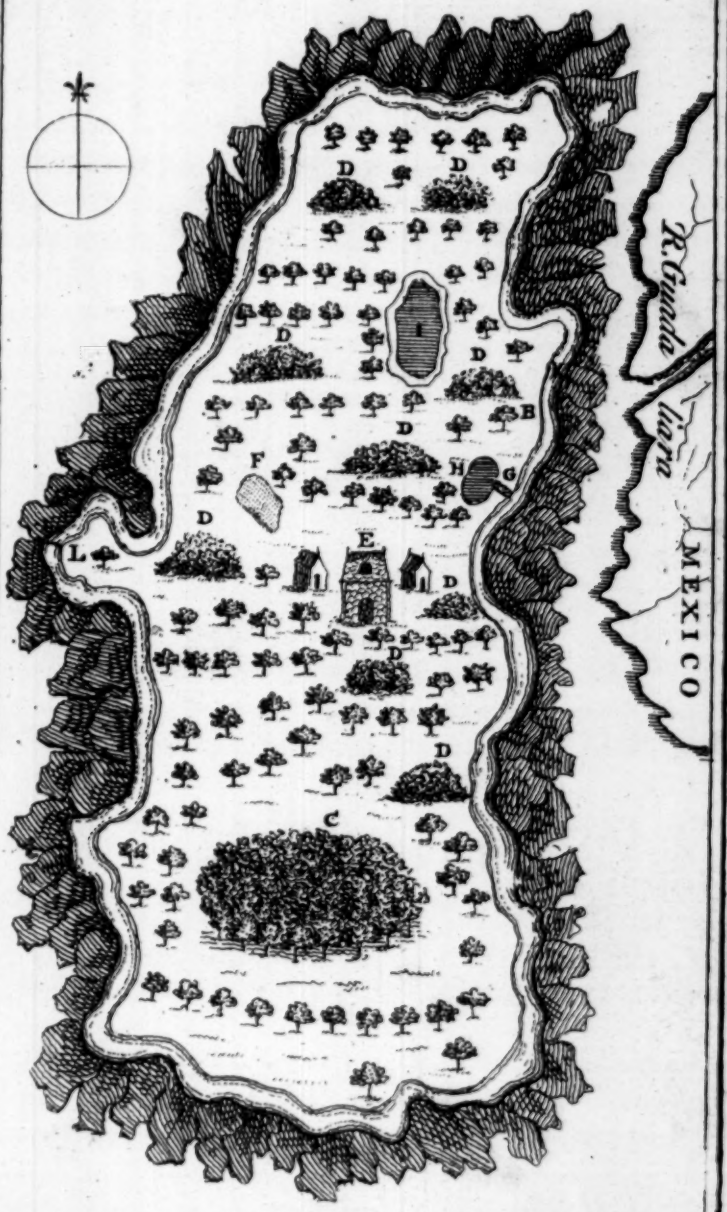
In

In buſy Worlds, and trading peopled Towns,
More faſt we ſin, than Sin itſelf abounds.
In ſoft Repoſe, *Quarll* Empires does diſdain;
Free from Diſquiet, Solitude's his Gain.
Thoughts more ſublime, a Haven more ſerene,
Nought e'er to vex him that may cauſe the Spleen.
Methinks I with him ſhare of *Eden*'s Grove,
And wiſh no better Paradiſe to rove:
Here's not *Ambition* with her gaudy Train,
Nor *Envy* trampling down the Poor or Mean;
Nor *Avarice* nor haughty *Pride* invade,
Nor can *Remorſe* his ſlumb'ring Nights upbraid;
In Peace he reſts, unenvy'd or unknown,
And pities Monarchs on their toilſome Throne.
No King that reigns, but muſt as Mortals die;
And when they rule, no Subject ſhould aſk, Why?
Heav'n grants them Licence; and, when God gives Laws,
Where's the bold Man that dares diſpute the Cauſe?
Would the Great Men from one ſo mean be told,
They ſerve a Crown for Int'reſt, and for Gold?
'Tis with Content *Quarll* lives; he's truly bleſs'd,
Has nought to dread, nor is with aught diſtreſs'd;
Prays for his Country, and its preſent Prince,
That he may reign in Heav'n, when call'd from hence.
Here, in theſe lonely Shades, he juſt uproſe,
A Type of Reſurrection to diſcloſe;

A Reſurrection from a Watry Hell,
Where Shoals of Terrors ſtrove which ſhould excel;
A Reſurrection, Emblem of the Laſt,
Which will recal our ev'ry Guilt that's paſt;
Drawing a Glare of Conſcience to our View,
Of Horror for our Sins, both old and new:
But ſo unſpotted in his preſent State,
I'd wiſh myſelf as happy; not more Great:
I'd know no Change; but, when God calls, obey,
Prepar'd in my Account for Judgment-day;
Then happy riſe from Cares, and worldly Toys,
To more ſubſtantial and eternal Joys.
This honeſt HERMIT, at a tranſient View,
Seems to be born all Precedent t' out-do.
Something uncommon makes him wond'rous ſeem:
Sound are his Morals, drawn from ev'ry Theme.
Thus from our *Engliſh* HERMIT learn to know,
That early Piety oppoſes Woe.
Thro' ev'ry Stage of Life ſee *Philip* toſt,
And on a deſart Shore by Tempeſt caſt,
Where he's moſt happy, when imagin'd loſt:
So true it is, the GODS our Good deſign.
As lab'ring Slaves dig Diamonds from a Mine,
From rugged Rocks the Sailors gain a Prize,
And, ſhipwreck'd oft, from Death to Life ariſe;
So may we at the Laſt dread Trumpet's Sound,
By true Repentance here on Earth, be found,
Acceptable in Heav'n, where Joys abound!

In grateful Hymns hail in the new Spring-day,
And, like the Angels, never ceaſe to pray:
A Kingdom *Quarll* doth undiſturb'd enjoy;
He's rais'd a Monarch, from an abject Boy.
And here I can't omit the pencil'd Plan
Of *Beaufidelle* his Monkey, and his Man.
The docile Beaſt moſt fervilely obeys,
And juſtly merits more than Human Praiſe;
A Beauty of his Kind, good-natur'd too,
A Brute ſo pleaſing, wonderful, and new,
Subſervient to his Lord, loving and juſt:
Where's Human Servant we can thus intruſt?

A Map of the Island Drawn by Philip Quarll.



THE

ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK I.

An ACCOUNT *how Mr.* QUARLL *was found out; with a Deſcription of his Dreſs, Habitation, and Utenſils; as alſo his Converſation with the Perſons who firſt diſcovered him.*

HAVING concluded thoſe Mercantile Affairs, which I undertook, by this Voyage, to negotiate; and being upon my Return for *England*, and Wind-bound; during my Stay I daily walked about the Sea-ſhore. Very early one Morning, the Weather being extreme fair, and the Sea wonderful calm, as I was taking my uſual Turn, I accidentally fell into Diſcourſe with a *Spaniſh Mexican* Inhabitant, named *Alvarado:* And, as we were viewing the Rocks which abound in thoſe Seas, he deſir'd me to take

notice of a vaſt long one about ſeven Leagues from Shore, which he ſaid was ſuppoſed to incloſe ſome Land, by its great Extent; but the Acceſs to it was very dangerous, by reaſon of the Rocks, which reach ſo far under Water, being in ſome Places too ſhallow for Boats, and in others too deep to ford over; and the Sea commonly very rough in that Place, hitherto prevented farther Reſearch, ſuppoſing the Advantage which might accrue from the Land, would not countervail the Coſt and Trouble of making it inhabitable; for that he and ſome Friends had on a fine Day, as it now was, the Curioſity to go as near as they could with Safety, which was above fifty Yards from the main Rock, but were forced to return as unſatisfied as they went; only, that he had the Pleaſure of catching ſome delicious Fiſh, which lay playing upon the Surface of the Water, having a Rod in his Hand, and Lines in his Pocket, being ſeldom without, when he walks on the Sea-ſhore: Theſe Fiſh are ſomewhat larger than an Herring in its Prime, ſkinned like a Mackerel, made as a Gudgeon, and of divers beautiful Colours, eſpecially if caught in a fair Day; having ſince obſerved, that they are more or leſs beautiful, according to the Serenity of the Weather.

The Account he gave me of them excited my Curioſity to go and catch ſome; and he being, as uſual, provided with Tackle, we picked up a Parcel of yellow Maggots, which breed in dead Tortoiſes upon the Rock, at which thoſe Fiſhes bite very eagerly.

Thus equipp'd with all Neceſſaries for the Sport, we agreed with a young Fellow, one of the Long-boat's Crew, belonging to the Ship I was come over in; whoſe Maſter being juſt come on Shore, and not expected to return ſpeedily, he readily conſented

ſented to row us thither for about the Value of a Shilling.

Being come to the Place, we found extraordinary Sport: The Fiſhes were ſo eager, that our Line was no ſooner in, but we had a Bite.

Whilſt we were fiſhing, the young Man that row'd us thither, 'ſpying a Cleft in the Rock, thro' which he ſaw a Light, had a Mind to ſee what was at the other Side; ſo put off his Cloaths in order to wade to it: Thus, having taken the Hitcher of the Boat, he gropes along for ſure Footing, the Rock being very full of Holes.

Being come to the Cleft, he creeps through, and in a ſhort time returns, calling to us with Precipitation, which expreſſed both Joy and Surprize: Gentlemen! Gentlemen! ſaid he, I have made a Diſcovery of a new Land, and the fineſt that the Sun ever ſhone on: Leave off your Fiſhing; you'll find here much better Buſineſs. Having by that time caught a pretty handſome Diſh of Fiſh, we put up our Tackling, faſtened our Boat to the Rock, and ſo went to ſee this new-found Land.

Being come at the other Side of the Rock, we ſaw, as he ſaid, a moſt delightful Country, but deſpaired going to it, there being a Lake about a Mile long, at the Bottom of the Rock, which parted it from the Land; for neither *Alvarado* nor myſelf could ſwim; but the young Fellow, who could, having leap'd into the Water, finding it all the Way but Breaſt-high, we went in alſo, and waded to the other Side, which aſcended gently, about five or ſix Feet from the Lake, to a moſt pleaſant Land, flat and level, cover'd with a curious Graſs, ſomething like Chamomile, but of no Smell, and of an agreeable Taſte: It bore alſo abundance of fine lofty Trees, of different Kinds and Make, which in ſeveral Places ſtood in Cluſters,

compoſing Groves of different Height and Largeneſs. Being come to a Place where the Trees ſtood in ſuch a Diſpoſition as gave our Sight a greater Scope, we ſaw, at ſome Diſtance, a moſt delightful Wood, of a conſiderable Extent. The Agreeableneſs of the Perſpective made by Nature, both for the creating Pleaſure, and Condolence of Grief, prompted my Curioſity to a View of the Delights which the Diſtance we were at might, in ſome meaſure, rob us of: But *Alvarado*, who, till then, had diſcern'd nothing whereby we could judge the Iſland to be inhabited, was fearful, and would not venture farther that Way, leſt we ſhould of a ſudden be ſallied upon by wild Beaſts out of the Wood; and, as I could not diſcommend his Precaution, the Thickneſs of it giving Room to believe there might be dangerous Creatures in it; ſo we went Southward, finding Numbers of fine Trees, and here-and-there ſmall Groves, which we judg'd to be compoſed of forty or fifty ſeveral Trees: But, upon Examination, we found it, to our great Amazement, to proceed of only one Plant; whoſe outmoſt lower Branches, bending to the Ground, about ſeven or eight Feet from the middle Stem, ſtruck Root, and became Plants, which did the ſame; and in that manner covered a conſiderable Spot of Ground; ſtill growing leſs, as they ſtood fartheſt from the old Body.

Having walk'd ſome time under that moſt ſurpriſing and wonderful Plant, admiring the Greatneſs of Nature's Works, we went on, finding ſeveral of the ſame in our way, wherein harbour'd Monkeys; but their ſwift Flight prevented our diſcerning their Colours: Yet, going on, we found there were two Kinds; one having green Backs, yellow Faces and Bellies; the other grey, with white Bellies and Faces; but both Sorts exceeding beautiful.

At

At ſome Diſtance we perceiv'd three Things ſtanding together, which I took to be Houſes: I believe, ſaid I, this Iſland is inhabited; for, if I miſtake not, yonder are Dwelling-places. So they are, ſaid *Alvarado*; and therefore I don't think it Wiſdom to venture any farther, leſt they ſhould be Savages, and do us Hurt; ſo would have gone back: But I was reſolv'd to ſee what they were, and perſuaded him to go on; ſaying, it would be time enough for us to retreat when we perceiv'd Danger. That may be too late, ſaid he: For as Evil doth not always ſucceed Danger, Danger doth not always precede Evil; we may be ſurpriſed. Well, well, ſaid I, if any People ſhould come upon us, we muſt ſee them at ſome Diſtance; and if we can't avoid them, here are Three of us, a good long Staff with an Iron Point at one End, and an Hook at the other; I ſhall exerciſe that, and keep them off, at leaſt till you get away: Come along, and fear not. So I pull'd him along.

Being come near enough to diſcern better, we found, that what we took for Houſes were rather Arbours, being apparently made of green Trees: Then, indeed, I began to fanſy ſome wild People inhabited them; and doubted whether it were ſafe to go nearer; but conceal'd my Doubt, leſt I ſhould intimidate *Alvarado* ſo that he ſhould run away, to which he was very much inclin'd. I only ſlacken'd my Pace, which *Alvarado* perceiving, imagined that I ſaw ſome Evil coming, which he thought unavoidable; and, not daring to go from his Company, I only condoled his Misfortune; ſaying, he dearly repented taking my Advice: That he fear'd we ſhould pay dear for our ſilly Curioſity; for indeed thoſe Things were more like Thieves Dens, or wild Peoples Huts, than Chriſtians Habitations.

By this time we were come near a Spot of Ground, pretty clear of Trees, on which ſome Animals were

feeding, which I took to be Goats; but *Alvarado* fanſied them to be Deers, by their ſwiſt Flight at our appearing: However, I inferr'd by their Shyneſs, that we were out of the way in our Judgment concerning the Arbours: For, ſaid I, if theſe were inhabited, thoſe Creatures would not have been ſo ſcar'd at the Sight of Men; and, if by Nature wild, they would not graze ſo near Mens Habitations, had there been any body in them. I rather believe ſome Hermit has formerly liv'd there, and is either dead, or gone. *Alvarado*, who to that time had neither heard nor ſeen any thing that could contradict what I ſaid, began to acquieſce to it, and goes on.

'Being come within Reach of plain Diſcernment, we were ſurpriſed: If theſe, ſaid I, be the Works of Savages, they far exceed our expert Artiſts. There Regularity appear'd unconfin'd to the Rules of Art, and complete Architecture without the Craft of the Artiſt; Nature and Time only being capable to bring them to that Perfection. They were neither Houſes, Huts, nor Arbours; yet had all the Uſefulneſs and Agreements of each.

Having ſufficiently admired the uncommon Beauty of the Outſides without Interruption, but rather diverted with the moſt agreeable Harmony of various Singing-birds, as perch'd on a green Hedge, which ſurrounded about one Acre of Land near the Place, we had the Curioſity to ſee the Inſide; and, being neareſt the middlemoſt, we examin'd that firſt. It was about nine Feet high, and as much ſquare; the Walls very ſtrait and ſmooth, cover'd with green Leaves, ſomething like thoſe of a Mulberry-tree, lying as cloſe and regular as Slates on a ſlated Houſe: The Top went up rounding like a Cupola, and cover'd in the ſame manner as the Sides; from each Corner iſſued a ſtrait Stem, about twelve Feet higher, bare of Branches

to

to the Top, which were very full of Leaves, and ſpread over, making a moſt pleaſant Canopy to the Manſion beneath.

Being full of Admiration at the wonderful Structure and Nature of the Place, we came to a Door which was made of green Twigs, neatly woven, and faſten'd with a ſmall Stick, through a Loop made of the ſame.

The Door being faſten'd without, gave us Encouragement to venture in; it being evident, that the Hoſt was abſent: So we open'd it, and the firſt Thing we ſaw, being oppoſite to the Door, was, a Bed lying on the Ground, which was an hard dry Hearth, very ſmooth and clean: We had the Curioſity to examine what it was made of, and found it another Subject of Admiration. The Covering was a Mat about three Inches thick, made of a ſort of Graſs, which, tho' as dry as the oldeſt Hay, was as green as a Leek, felt as ſoft as Cotton, and was as warm as Wool: The Bed was made of the ſame, and in the ſame manner, but three times as thick; which made it as eaſy as a Down Bed: Under that lay another, but ſomething harder.

At one Side of the Room ſtood a Table made of two Pieces of thin Oak-board, about three Feet long, faſten'd upon four Sticks driven into the Ground, and by it a Chair made of green Twigs, as the Door; at the other Side of the Room lay a Cheſt on the Ground, like a Sailor's ſmall Cheſt; over it, againſt the Wall, hung a Linen Jacket and Breeches, ſuch as Seamen wear on board; on another Pin hung a large Coat, or Gown, made of the ſame ſort of Graſs, and after the ſame manner, as the Bed's Covering, but not above half an Inch thick; and a Cap by it, of the ſame: Theſe we ſuppoſed to be a Winter Garb for ſomebody.

Having view'd the Furniture of the Dwelling-place, we examin'd its Fabric, which we could not find out by the Outſide, it being ſo cloſely cover'd with Leaves; but the Inſide being bare, we found it to be ſeveral Trees, whoſe Bodies met cloſe, and made a ſolid Wall, which, by the Breadth of every Stem, we judg'd to be about ſix Inches thick: Their Bark, being very ſmooth, and of a pleaſant Olive-colour, made a mighty agreeable Wainſcoting; the Roof, which was hung very thick with Leaves, was Branches, which reach'd from End to End, and were croſs'd over by the Side-ones that were woven between, which made a very even and ſmooth Cieling, ſo thick of Leaves and Branches, that no Rain could penetrate. My Companion's Uneaſineſs, expecting the Hoſt's Return every Moment, hinder'd my examining everything more narrowly; and, having ſlightly look'd into the Cheſt, which lay open, wherein we ſaw nothing but Sheets of Parchment, which his Haſte would not permit me to look into, we went away.

Going out, we ſaw at one Corner of the Room, behind the Door, a Couple of Firelocks, the Sight of which much alarm'd my Company, and, I muſt confeſs, ſtartled me; for, till then, I was inclinable to believe ſome Hermit dwelt in the Place: But finding Arms in the Room of a Crucifix, and religious Pictures, which are the common Ornaments of thoſe religious Men, made me waver in my Opinion: And, having taken the Pieces in my Hands, which, for Ruſt, appear'd not to have been fit for Uſe for many Years, renewed my former Opinion; ſuppoſing them to be the Effects of ſome Shipwreck which the Hermit found upon the Rocks. But my Company, perſiſting in their own, haſten'd out, and would have gone quite away, without

without ſeeing any more, had I not, by many Arguments, made them ſenſible, that if thoſe Arms had been intended for the evil Uſe *Alvarado* imagin'd, they would have been kept in better Order; to which being obliged to acquieſce, he conſented to go and examine the other, it being as worthy of Admiration as that we had ſeen, though quite of another Nature, but much of the ſame Height and Make.

The next we came at was cover'd all over with the ſame ſort of Graſs as grew on the Ground, which lay as even as tho' it had been mow'd and roll'd: Behind it were ſeveral Lodges, made, as it were, for ſome Dogs; but we neither ſaw nor heard any.

Having view'd the Place all around, we poſted the young Fellow with us at the Outſide, to give Notice when any-body appear'd, leſt we ſhould be ſurpriſed whilſt we ſaw the Inſide: So, having open'd the Door, which was made and faſten'd after the manner of the firſt, we went in, expecting to find another Dwelling-place, but it prov'd rather a Kitchen; there being no Bed, but only a Parcel of Shells, of different Sizes, which we ſuppos'd to be apply'd for Utenſils; ſome being ſcorch'd at the Outſide, as having been on the Fire, but exceeding clean within: The reſt were, both Inſide and Outſide, as fine as Nakes of Pearl.

At one End of the Room was a Hole cut in the Ground like Stew-ſtoves in great Kitchens; about three or four Feet from that there was another Fire-place, made of three Stones, fit to roaſt at; in both which Places appear'd to have been Fire lately, by Wood-coals, and Aſhes freſh made. This confirm'd my Opinion, that it was an Hermitage. *Alvarado*, who all along fear'd we ſhould meet with Men who would miſuſe us, was not a little

pleaſed to find Fire-places in room of Beds, and Kitchen-utenſils inſtead of Weapons. I hope, ſaid he, we are not in ſo great Danger as I feared: Here cannot be many Men, unleſs they croud together in yonder Place; and, if ſo, they would have been here before now, had they been in the Way. His Fears being in a great meaſure diſperſed, we looked about more leiſurely; and, ſeeing ſeveral Shells, that were covered, on a Shelf that lay croſs two Sticks that were ſtuck in the Wall, which was made of Turf, we had the Curioſity to ſee what was in them; and found, in one, pickled Anchovies; in others, Muſhrooms, Capers, and other Sorts of Pickles. Let them, ſaid I, be who they will that dwell here, I am ſure they know good Eating; and therefore, probably, may be no Strangers to good Manners. Upon another Shelf, behind the Door, lay divers Sorts of dry'd Fiſhes; and upon the Ground ſtood, uncovered, Two Cheſts with Fiſh and Fleſh in Salt.

Theſe Proviſions, being ſomething too voluptuous for an Hermit, gave us Room for Speculation. I have liv'd (ſaid *Alvarado*) at *Mexico* theſe ſix Years, and have been at *Peru* above twenty Times, and yet never heard talk of this Iſland: The Acceſs to it is ſo difficult, and dangerous, that, I dare ſay, we are the firſt that have been on theſe Sides of the Rocks. I am very apt to believe, that a Company of determined Buccaniers, which are ſaid to frequent theſe Seas, ſhelter here; and that the Habitation we have ſeen, and this Place, belong to their Captain; and that the Company reſorts in Caves up and down theſe Rocks. Really I could not well gainſay it, being too probable; yet I would not altogether acquieſce to his Opinion, leſt he ſhould thereby take a Motive to go away before we had ſeen the other Place. I muſt confeſs, ſaid I, here's Room

Room for Conjectures, but no Proof of Certainty: However, let it be as you ſay, 'tis a plain Caſe here are none to diſturb us; therefore, whilſt we have Liberty, let us ſee the other Place: So we faſtened the Door as we found it, and went to the next, which was ſhut after the ſame manner as the two precedeing, but made of quite different Stuff; being a complete Arbour, compoſed of Trees, planted within a Foot of one another, whoſe Branches were woven together in ſo regular a manner, that they made ſeveral agreeable Compartments, and ſo cloſe, that nothing but Air could enter: It was of the ſame Height and Bigneſs with the Kitchen, which ſtood at the other End of the Dwelling-place, which made a very uniform Wing to it.

The Coolneſs of the Arbour remov'd our Doubts of its being another Dwelling, unleſs only uſed in hot Weather.

Having ſufficiently view'd the Outſide, we went in, and found ſeveral Boards, like Dreſſers or Tables, in a Pantry, on which lay divers broad and deep Shells, as beautiful as thoſe in the Kitchen; in ſome of which was Butter, in others Cream and Milk. On a Shelf lay ſeveral ſmall Cheeſes, and on another a Parcel of Roots like *Jeruſalem* Artichokes, which ſeemed to have been roaſted: All this did but confirm the Opinion we were in, that it was no Hermitage; there being ſufficient to gratify the Appetite, as well as to ſupport Nature. Therefore, not knowing what to think of the Maſter of the Houſe, we made no long Stay, but concluded to haſte, and get our Fiſh dreſſed, it being near Dinner-time; and as the Trees ſtood very thick inland, and might conceal Men from our Sight till we came too near to ſhun 'em; we thought it proper to walk on the Outſide, near the Rocks, that we might ſee at ſome Diſtance before us.

Walking along, a Phlegm ſticking in my Throat, I happen'd to hawk pretty loud; the Noiſe was anſwer'd from I believe twenty Places of the Rock, and in as many different Sounds; which alarm'd *Alvarado*, who took it to be a Signal from Men conceal'd up and down the Rock, not conſidering the Difficulty of their coming at us; there being a Lake at the Foot of it, which they muſt have been oblig'd to wade over, and which would have given us time to get away: But Fear, which often blinds Reaſon, repreſented the Evil infallible to his Thought, which was morally impoſſible. I did all I could to make him ſenſible they were but Echoes; and, to convince him thereof, I gave a loud Hem, which was anſwer'd in like manner; but by being a ſecond time repeated, and by a louder Voice, I was certain the laſt did not proceed from me; which put me in in Apprehenſion that ſomebody, beſides myſelf, had hemm'd alſo. My Companion, whoſe Countenance, being turn'd as pale as Death, expreſſed the Exceſs of his Fears, would have run away, had not the Voice come from the very Way we were to go. Now, ſaid he (hardly able to utter his Words for trembling), you are, I hope, convinced that it would have been ſafer for us to retire, inſtead of gratifying your unreaſonable Curioſity: What do you think will become of us? The young Fellow, at theſe Words, falls a weeping, ſaying, he wiſh'd he had miſs'd the getting of that Money, which was like to be dearly earn'd. I muſt confeſs, I began to be a little apprehenſive of Danger, and wiſh'd myſelf ſafe away, but conceal'd my Thoughts; heartening them as we las I could: And, repreſenting the Danger equal, either moving forwards, or ſtanding ſtill, I at laſt perſuaded them to go on.

We were ſcarce gone forty Paces farther, before we perceived, at a conſiderable Diſtance, ſomething

thing like a Man, with another Creature, but preſently loſt them amongſt the Trees, before we could have a full View of them; which made every one of us conceive a different Idea of what we had ſeen. *Alvarado* would have it to be a Giant, and a Man of common Size with him, and both armed Cap-à-pé. The poor Lad, who was already as bad as a Slave, being bound to a ſevere, ill-natur'd Maſter, fear'd Death more than Bondage; ſo took what he had ſeen for ſome She-bear, and one of her Whelps with her, to make her yet more dreadful; and, by all means, would have thrown himſelf into the Lake, in order to get at the other Side of the Rock: Thus the Danger appear'd to each of them to be what they dreaded moſt; but I was ſomewhat better compoſed in Mind than they. I gave the Object I ſaw the likelieſt Reſemblance the Time it was in Sight would permit, which I could adapt to nothing but a Man of common Size, and ſomething like a Dog with him; ſo, perſiſting in my Opinion, made them waver in theirs: Thus we went on ſomething better compoſed.

Being gone about an hundred Yards farther, we ſaw the ſame again, but nearer hand, and without Interruption, the Place being pretty clear of Trees: Thus having a full View, we were all, to our great Satisfaction, convinced, that what had been taken for a formidable Giant, and a terrible She-bear, was but an ordinary Man; but that which was with him running up a Tree as ſoon as he perceiv'd us, prevented our diſcerning what Animal it was: But the Man, who walked on apace, ſoon came within the Reach of a more certain Diſcernment, and appear'd to be a venerable old Man, with a worſhipful white Beard, which covered his naked Breaſt, and a long Head of Hair of the ſame Colour; which,

which, ſpreading over his Shoulders, hung down to his Loins.

His Preſence, which inſpired Reſpect more than Fear, ſoon recalled the frighten'd Folks ſcared Senſes, who, to cover this Faint-heartedneſs, excuſed themſelves by the Miſrepreſentations Diſtance cauſes on Objects. The old Man, who, by that time, was come near enough to diſcern our ſpeaking *Engliſh*, lets fall a Bundle of Sticks he had under one Arm, and a Hatchet he carried in the other Hand, and runs to me, being the next to him, embracing me, and ſaying, Dear Countrymen, for I hear ye are *Engliſhmen*, by what Accident are ye come hither? a Place, the Approach whereof is defended by a thouſand Perils and Dangers, and not to be come at but by a narrow Eſcape of Death. Are ye ſhipwreck'd? No, thank God, ſaid I, moſt reverend Father; it was mere Curioſity that brought us hither; theſe Perils, which you ſay defend the Approach of this Iſland, being abſent, by the extraordinary Calmneſs of the Sea. But, if I may aſk, Pray how came You hither? By the Help of Providence, replied the good old Man, who ſnatched me from out of the ravenous Jaws of Death, to fix me in this ſafe and peaceable Spot of Land. I was ſhipwreck'd, Thanks to my Maker, and was ſav'd by being caſt away. I conceive, Sir, ſaid I, you have been chaſed by ſome Pirates, and eſcaped Slavery by ſtriking upon the Rocks which ſurround this Iſland: But now you have avoided that diſmal Fate, embrace the lucky Opportunity of getting away from a Place ſo remote from human Aſſiſtance, which your Age makes you ſtand in need of. That's your Miſtake, replied the old Man: He who truſts in God, needs no other Help. I allow that, Sir, ſaid I; but our Truſt in God doth not require us to caſt away, or deſpiſe, the Help of Man. I do not

not in the leaſt queſtion your Piety, but miſtruſt the Frailty of Nature, and Debility of Age; therefore would have you come and live within the Reach of Attendance. You may, without ſlackening your Devotion, live in the World; you ſhall have no Occaſion to concern yourſelf with any Cares that may diſturb your pious Thoughts. No, replied the old Man; was I to be made Emperor of the Univerſe, I would not be concerned with the World again; nor would you require me, did you but know the Happineſs I enjoy out of it. Come along with me; and if, after you have ſeen how I live here, you perſiſt in your Advice, I will ſay you have no Notion of an happy Life. I have, good Sir, ſaid I, already ſeen, with great Admiration, your matchleſs Habitation; but there are other Neceſſaries your Age requires: As Cloaths, to defend the Injuries of the Air; and Meat ſuitable to the Weakneſs of your Stomach. That's your Miſtake, replied the old Man; I want for no Cloaths; I have a Change for every Seaſon of the Year: I am not confined to Faſhions, but ſuit my own Conveniencies. Now this is my Summer-Dreſs; I put on warmer as the Weather grows colder: And for Meat, I have Fiſh, Fleſh, and Fowls; and as choice as Man can wiſh for. Come, you ſhall dine with me; and Ten to One but I may give you Veniſon, and perhaps a Diſh of Wild Fowls too: Let's go and ſee what Providence has ſent us. So we went to a Wood, about a Mile farther, where he had faſten'd ſeveral low Nets, at different Gaps, in the Thickſet; in one of which happened to be an Animal ſomething like a Fawn, twice as big as an Hare, the Colour of a Fox, and faced and footed like a Goat. Did I not tell you, ſaid the good Man, I might chance to give you Veniſon? Now let's look after the Fowls. So we went a little farther,

at

at a Place where he had hung a long Net between two high Trees, at the Bottom of which was faſtened a Bag of the ſame to receive the Fowls; who in the Night, being ſtopp'd by the Net, flutter'd to the Bottom. There alſo happen'd to be Game. A Couple of Fowls, made like Woodcocks, but of the Bigneſs and Colour of a Pheaſant, were taken at the Bottom of a Bag. Now, ſaid the old Man, theſe I have, without committing the Sin of bidding leſs for them than I know they are really worth, or making the Poulterers ſwear they coſt them more than they did. Well, now I may give you a Diſh of Fiſh alſo; 'tis but going half a Mile, or thereabouts. There's no need, Sir, ſaid I, for any more: There are but four of us, and here's Proviſion for half a Score; but if you are diſpoſed for Fiſh, we have ſome in a Boat on the other Side of a Rock: It is but going for them. Very well, ſaid the old Man; it is but going above a Mile, then ſtrip and wade over a Lake, then climb up a rugged Rock twice backward and forward, to fetch what we can have for only taking a pleaſant Walk, all the while diverted with the ſweet Harmony of a Number of fine Birds. Look here; th's Complaiſance often puts Men to a World of needleſs Trouble: Come, we'll make ſhift to pick a Dinner out of theſe. Sir, ſaid I, 'tis no Shift where there's ſuch Plenty. Plenty! ſaid the old Man; why, I tell ye, this is a ſecond Garden of *Eden*; only here's no forbidden Fruit, nor Women to tempt a Man. I ſee, Sir, ſaid I, Providence ſupplies you plentifully with Neceſſaries, if Age does not deprive you of Strength. Age! replied the old Man; why I am not ſo old as that comes to, neither: I was but Eight-and-twenty when I was caſt away, and that is but Fifty Years ago. Indeed, if I lived as you do that dwell in the wiſe World, who hurry on your Days

as if your End came on too ſlow, I might be accounted old. I do not gainſay, reverend Father, but that you bear your Age wonderful well; but a Multiplicity of Days muſt make the ſtrongeſt Nature bend: Yes, Time will break the tougheſt Conſtitution; and, by what you ſay, you have ſeen a conſiderable Number of Years. Yes, replied the old Man; a few Days have run over my Head, but I never ſtrove to out-run them, as they do that live too faſt. Well, ſays he, you are a young Man, and have ſeen fewer Days than I; yet you may be almoſt worn out: Come, match this, ſays he. With that he gave a Hem, with ſuch a Strength and Clearneſs, that the Sound made my Ears tingle for ſome Minutes after. Indeed, Sir, ſaid I, you have ſo far outdone what I can pretend to do, that I will not preſume to imitate you. Then I am afraid, ſays he, you will prove to be the old Man. Well, then, you, or your Friend, the ſtrongeſt of you, fetch hither that Stone; it does not look to be very heavy (pointing at a large Stone that lay about two Yards off). I'll endeavour, Sir, ſaid I, to roll it; for, I dare ſay, it is paſt my Strength to lift it. So, to pleaſe the old Man, I went to take it up; but could hardly move it. Come, come, ſaid the old Gentleman, I find that muſt be Work for me. With that, he goes, takes up the Stone, and toſſes it to the Place he bid me bring it. I ſee, ſaid he, you have exerted your Strength too often, which makes you now ſo weak: Well, you ſee the Advantages of living remote from the World. Had you had leſs of human Aſſiſtance, I am apt to believe you would not want it ſo ſoon as you are likely to do. Come, let's make much of that little Strength we have left, taking neceſſary Support at proper times: It is now paſt Noon; therefore let us loſe no Time, but haſte home to get our Dinner ready.

So

So we went back to the Place where the Bundle of Sticks lay, which we made the young Fellow with us carry, and went directly to the Kitchen; where, whilſt he made a Fire, one caſt the Animal, and the other two pulled the Fowls. I am ſorry, ſaid the old Man, you muſt take that Trouble; but your Preſence has frightened away my Servant, who uſed to do that Work for me. Have you a Servant, then, Sir? ſaid I. Yes, ſaid he, and one a Native of this Iſland. Then I find, Sir, ſaid I, this Iſland is inhabited. Yes, anſwer'd the old Man, with Monkeys and myſelf, but nobody elſe, thank God; otherwiſe, I can tell you, I ſhould hardly have lived ſo long. Then, Sir, ſaid I, I ſuppoſe that was it we ſaw run up a Tree. Yes, ſaid he; my Monkey, like myſelf, loves not much Company. Pray, Sir, ſaid I, how did you bring him ſo well under Command, as to keep with you, when he has Liberty to run away? I wonder the wild ones do not intice him from you. I had him young, replied the old Man, and made very much of him, which thoſe Creatures dearly love: Beſides, when he was grown up, the wild ones would not ſuffer him amongſt them; ſo that he was forced to remain with me. I had another before this; but he, I may ſay, was ſent, by Providence, both to be an Help and Diverſion to me; for he was ſo knowing, that he took a great deal of Labour off my Hands, and diſperſed many anxious Hours, which the Irkſomeneſs of my Solitude had created. 'Tis now about twelve Years ſince; for I keep a Memorial, which indeed I deſign'd to have been a Journal; but I unfortunately let the regular Order of the Days ſlip out of my Memory: However, I obſerve a ſeventh Day, and reckon the Years from Winter to Winter; ſo I cannot well miſtake.

One Day when I had roaſted a Quantity of Roots, which I eat inſtead of Bread, having ſpread them on my Table and Cheſt to cool, in order to lay them by for Uſe; I went out, leaving my Door open, to let the Air in.

Having walked an Hour or two, I return'd home, where I found a Monkey, whom the Smell of the hot Roots had brought; who, during my Abſence, had been eating. My Preſence very much ſurpriſed him, yet he ſtill kept his Place, only diſcontinued eating, ſtaring me in the Face: The unexpected Gueſt at once ſtartled me, and filled me with Admiration; for, certainly, no Creature of its Kind could be compared to it, for Beauty. His Back was of a lively Green, his Face and Belly of a lively Yellow; his Coat, all over, ſhining like burniſh'd Gold. The extraordinary Beauty of the Creature raiſed in me an ardent Deſire to keep him; but I deſpair'd of ever making him tame, being come to his full Growth: Therefore having reſolv'd to keep him tied, I went in, and ſhut the Door. The Beaſt, which, till then, had not offered to make his Eſcape, appeared very much diſturbed, and ſtared about him for ſome Place to get out at: Perceiving his Diſorder, I did not advance, but turned my Back to him, to give him time to compoſe himſelf, which he in a ſhort time did, as appeared by his falling to eat again; which made me conceive Hopes that I ſhould, in time, make him familiar. Having about me ſtale roaſted Roots, which eat much pleaſanter than the freſh, and are leſs ſtuffing, I threw ſome at him, at which he ſeemed diſpleaſed, and ſtood ſtill a while, ſtaring in my Face; but my looking well pleaſed, which I believe the Animal was ſenſible of, made him pick them up, and fall to eating with a freſh Appetite. I was overjoy'd at his eaſy Compoſure; ſo reach'd him Water

in

in a Shell, that the want of nothing might induce him to a Retreat. I ſet it down as near him as I could, without diſturbing him: He came to it very orderly, and, having drank his Fill, he laid it down, and look'd me in the Face, careleſly ſcratching his Backſide: Seeing he had done, I advanced, and took away the Shell; at which he never ſtirr'd.

The forward Diſpoſition of the Beaſt towards a perfect Familiarity, made me reſolve to ſtay within the Remainder of the Day, no-wiſe queſtioning but my Company would, in a great meaſure, advance it. So I made ſhift to ſup upon a few Roots I had about me, and went pretty early to-bed; where I was no ſooner laid, but the Creature got acroſs the Feet thereof, and continu'd very quiet till the next Morning when I got up; at which time he was alſo watching my Actions. I made very much of him, which he took very compoſedly; ſtanding ſtill to be ſtroaked. Then, indeed, I thought myſelf, in a manner, ſecure of him, and gave him his Belly-full, as I had done the Day before; but, having a preſſing Occaſion to go out, I went to the Door, thinking to ſhut him in till my Return: But he follow'd me ſo cloſe, that I could not open it without endangering his getting out; which, tho' he appear'd pretty tame, I did not care to venture, our Acquaintance being ſo very new: Yet, as I was obliged to go, I did run the Hazard; ſo open'd the Door by Degrees, that, in caſe the Beaſt ſhould offer to run, I might take an Opportunity to ſlip out, and keep him in: But the Creature never offering to go any farther than I went, I truſted him to go with me, hoping that, if he went away, the kind Uſage he met with would, one Day or other, make him come back again: But, to my great Surprize, as well as Satisfaction, he readily return'd with me, having waited my Time: Yet, as I had Occaſion to go out a ſecond time,

time, wanting Sticks to make a Fire, for which I was oblig'd to go near the Place where moſt of his Kind reſorted, I was afraid to truſt him with me, leſt he ſhould be decoy'd by the others: Therefore, having taken up a Bundle of Cords, with which I tie up my Faggots, I watched an Opportunity to get out, and leave him behind: But the Beaſt was certainly apprehenſive of my Deſign; for he always kept near the Door, looking ſtedfaſtly at my Bundle of Cords, as deſirous of ſuch another; which I not having for him, cut a Piece off mine, and gave it him: And, ſeeing I could not leave him behind, I ventur'd to let him go with me, which he did very orderly, never offering to go one Step out of the Way; though others, of his Kind, came to look at him as he went by.

Being come to the Place where I uſed to cut dry Sticks, having cut down a ſufficient Quantity, I began to lay ſome acroſs my Cord. The Creature, having taken Notice of it, did the ſame to his, and with ſo much Dexterity and Agility, that his Faggot was larger, and ſooner made, than mine; which, by that time, being large enough, and as much as he could well carry, I bound it up; which ſet him to do the ſame with his, which was abundantly too large a Load for him.

Our Faggots being made, I took up that which I had made, to ſee how he would go about taking up his; which, being much too heavy for him, he could not lift; So running round it, I believe, twenty times, he look'd me in the Face, as craving Help. Having been ſufficiently diverted with the out-of-the-way Shifts he made, I gave him mine, and took up his: The poor Animal appear'd overjoy'd at the Exchange; therefore chearfully takes up the Bundle, and follows me home.

Seeing myſelf, according to all Probability, ſure of

of the dear Creature, whoſe late Actions gave me ſuch Grounds to hope from him both Service and Pleaſure, I return'd my hearty Thanks to kind Providence for its late prodigious Gift; for certainly it was never heard of before, that, in a deſart Place, one of thoſe wild Animals, who fly at the ſingle Appearance of an human Creature, ſhould voluntarily give itſelf to a Man, and, from the very Beginning, be ſo docile and tractable. Oh! ſurely it was endued with more than natural Inſtinct! for perfect Reaſon was ſeen in all its Actions. Indeed I was happy whilſt I had him; but my Happineſs, alas! was not of long ſtanding. As he ſpoke, I perceiv'd Tears in his Eyes. Pray, Sir, ſaid I, what became of that wonderful Creature? Alas! ſaid he, he was kill'd by Monkeys of the other Kind, which fell upon him, one Day, as he was going for Water by himſelf: For the poor dear Creature was grown ſo knowing, that if, at any time, either Firing or Water was wanted, I had nothing to do but to give him the Bundle of Cords, or the empty Veſſel, and he would ſtrait go and fetch either: In ſhort, he wanted nothing but Speech to complete him for human Society. Indeed, Sir, ſaid I, I cannot blame you for bemoaning the Loſs of ſo incomparable a Creature; the Account you give of him well intitles his Memory to Regret: But I hope this you have now, in a great meaſure, makes up your Loſs. O! not by far, replied the old Man: Indeed he goes about with me, and will carry a Fagot, or a Veſſel of Water, pick a Fowl, turn the Spit or String, when Meat is roaſting; yet he is nothing like my late dear *Beaufidelle*; for ſo I call that moſt lovely Creature: Beſides, this is unlucky; in imitating me, he often does me Miſchief. It was but the other Day that I had been writing for five or ſix Hours; I had Occaſion to go out, and

happened to leave my Pen and Ink upon the Table, and the Parchment I had been writing on cloſe by it: I was no ſooner gone, but the miſchievous Beaſt falls to work, ſcribbling over every Word I had been writing; and, when he had done, he lays it by in the Cheſt, as he ſaw me do what I had written, and takes out another, which he does the ſame to, and ſo to half a Score more; my Return prevented his doing more Miſchief: However, in a Quarter of an Hour, that I was abſent, he blotted out as much as I had been full ſix Months writing. Indeed I was angry, and could have beaten him; but that I conſidered my Revenge would not have repaired the Damage, but rather, perhaps, add to my Loſs, by making the Beaſt run away. Pray, Sir, ſaid I, how came you by him? Did he alſo give himſelf to you? No, replied the old Man, I had him young, and by mere Accident, unexpected and unſought for; having loſt both Time and Labour about getting one in the Room of him I had ſo unfortunately loſt. The Old ones are ſo fond of their Young, that they never are from them, unleſs in their Play they chaſe one another into the other Kind's Quarters, where their Dams dare not follow them: For they are ſuch Enemies to one another, that they watch all Opportunities to catch all they can of the contrary Sort, which they immediately ſtrangle: Which keeps their Increaſe very backward, that would otherwiſe grow too numerous for the Food the Iſland produces; which is, I believe, the Cauſe of their Animoſity.

About eight Years ago, which is the Time I have had this Beaſt, I was walking under one of the Cluſters of Trees where the green Sort of Monkeys harbour, which being the largeſt and moſt ſhady in the Iſland, I took the moſt Delight therein: As I was walking, at a ſmall Diſtance from me this Creature

Creature dropt off a Tree, and lay for dead; which, being of the grey Kind, made me wonder leſs at the Accident. I went, and took him up; and, accidentally handling his Throat, I opened his Windpipe, which was almoſt ſqueezed cloſe by that which took him, which my ſudden coming prevented from ſtrangling quite. I was extremely well pleas'd at the Event, by which I got what my paſt Cares and Diligence never could procure me. Having pretty well recover'd its Breath, and ſeeing no viſible Hurt about it, I imagined that I ſoon might recover it quite; ſo haſten'd home with it, gave it warm Milk, and laid it on my Bed: So that, with careful nurſeing, I quite recover'd him; and, with good keeping, made the Rogue thrive to that Degree, that he has outgrown the reſt of his Kind. No Queſtion, Sir, ſaid I, having taken ſuch Pains with him, you love him as well as his Predeceſſor. I cannot ſay ſo, neither, replied the old Man; tho' I cannot ſay but that I love the Creature: But its having the ill Fortune to be of that unlucky Kind which was the Death of my dear *Beaufidelle*, in a great meaſure leſſens my Affection. Beſides, he falls ſo ſhort, both of his Merit and Beauty, that I muſt give the Deceaſed the Preference: And, was it not for his cunning Tricks, which often divert me, I ſhould hardly value him at all; but he is ſo very cunning and facetious, that he makes me love him, notwithſtanding I mortally hate his Kind. I muſt divert you, whilſt Dinner is getting ready, with an Account of ſome of his Tricks.

Being extremely fond of me, he very ſeldom would be from me, but followed me every-where: And, as he uſed to go with me when I went to examine my Nets, ſeeing me now-and-then take out Game, he would, of his own Accord, when he ſaw me

me buſy writing, go and fetch what happened to be taken.

One Day finding a Fowl in the Net-bag, he pull'd it alive as he brought it home; ſo that I could not ſee any-thing whereby to diſcern its Kind. As ſoon as he came in, he ſets it down with ſuch Motions as expreſs'd Joy: The poor naked Fowl was no ſooner out of his Clutches, but that it took to its Legs, for want of Wings: Its ſudden Eſcape ſo ſurpriſed the Captor, that he ſtood amaz'd for a while, which gave the poor Creature time to gain a conſiderable Scope of Ground; but the aſtoniſh'd Beaſt, being recovered from his Surprize, ſoon made after it; but was a conſiderable time before he could catch it, having nothing to lay hold of; ſo that the Fowl would ſlip out of his Hands. The Race held about a Quarter of an Hour, in which time the poor Creature, having run itſelf out of Breath, was forced to lie down before its Purſuer, who immediately threw himſelf upon it; ſo took it up in his Arms, and brought it home, but was not ſo ready to ſet it down as before; for he held it by one Leg till I had laid hold of it.

I had a ſecond time as good Diverſion, but after another Manner. One Morning early, whilſt I was buſy in my Cottage, he went out, unperceiv'd by me; and, having been a conſiderable time abſent, I feared that ſuch another Accident had befallen him as that which happened to his Predeceſſor; ſo I went to ſee after him: And as he would often go and viſit the Nets in the Wood, I went there firſt, where I found him very buſy with ſuch an Animal as this we have here, which he found taken in one of the Gap-nets, and, being near as big as he, kept him a great while ſtruggling for Maſterſhip: Sometimes he would take it by the Ears, now-and-then by one Leg, next by the Tail; but could not get

him along; at laſt he laid hold of one of his hind Legs, and with the other Hand ſmote him on the Back, in order to drive him, not being able to pull him along; but the Beaſt, being too ſtrong, ſtill made towards the Thickſet, where he certainly would have hal'd the Driver, had I not come up to help him. Thus the old Gentleman entertain'd us with his Monkey's Tricks whilſt Dinner was dreſſing.

The Dinner being ready, we went to the Dwelling-place to eat it, leaving the young Fellow that was with us to attend the roaſted Meat, while we eat the firſt Diſh.

The old Gentleman having laid the Cloth, which, tho' ſomething coarſe, being made out of Part of a Ship-ſail, was very clean, he laid three Shells on it, about the Bigneſs of a middle-ſiz'd Plate, but as beautiful as any Nakes of Pearl I ever ſaw. Gentlemen, ſays he, if you can eat off of Shells, ye are welcome; I have no better Plates to give you. Sir, ſaid I, theſe are preferable to Silver ones, in my Opinion; and I very much queſtion whether any Prince in *Europe* can produce ſo curious a Service. They may richer, reply'd the old Man, but not cleaner.

The firſt Diſh he ſerv'd was Soup in a large deep Shell, as fine as the firſt, and one Spoon made of Shell, which he ſaid was all his Stock, being not uſed to, nor expecting Company: However, he fetch'd a couple of Muſſel-ſhells, which he waſh'd very clean; then gave *Alvarado* one, and took the other himſelf, obliging me to make uſe of the Spoon: So we ſat down, *Alvarado* and I upon the Cheſt, which we drew near the Table; and the old Gentleman (tho' much againſt his Will) upon the Chair.

Being

Being ſet down, we fell to eating the Soup, whoſe fragrant Smell excited my Appetite; and I profeſs the Taſte thereof was ſo excellent, that I never eat any comparable to it at *Pontac*'s; nor any-where before: It was made of one Half of the Beaſt we took in the Morning, with ſeveral Sorts of Herbs which eat like Artichokes, Aſparagus, and Celery; there were alſo Bits of roaſted Roots in it, inſtead of toaſted Bread, which added much to the Richneſs of it, taſting like Cheſtnuts: But, what ſurpriſed me moſt, there were green Peas in it, whoſe extraordinary Sweetneſs was diſcernible from every other Ingredient. Pity, ſaid I, the Acceſs to this Iſland is ſo difficult; what a bleſſed Spot of Land would it make, were it but inhabited! Here naturally grows what in *Europe* we plow, till, and labour hard for. You ſay, reply'd the old Man, this would be a bleſſed Spot of Ground, if it was inhabited: Now I am quite of another Opinion; for I think its Bleſſing conſiſts in its not being inhabited, being free of thoſe Curſes your populous and celebrated Cities abound in; here's nothing but Praiſes and Thankſgivings heard: And as for Nature beſtowing freely, and of her own Accord, what in *Europe* you are obliged, by Induſtry and hard Labour, in a manner to force from her, wonder not at: Conſider how much you daily rob her of her Due, and charge her with Slander and Calumny: Don't you frequently ſay, if a Man is addicted to any Vice, that it is his Nature, when it is the Effect and Fruit of his Corruption? So Nature, who attended the great Origin of all Things at the Creation, is now, by vile Wretches, deem'd in fault for all their Wickedneſs: Had Man remained in his firſt and natural State of Innocence, Nature would alſo have continued her original Indulgence over him: We may now think

ourſelves very happy, if that Bleſſing attends our Labour, which before the Fall of Man flowed on him, accompanied with Eaſe and Pleaſure.

Now theſe Peas, which have ſo much raiſed your Surprize, are indeed the Growth of this Iſland, tho' not its natural Product, but the Gifts of Providence, and the Fruits of Labour and Induſtry. I have till'd the Ground; Providence procur'd the Seed; Nature gave it Growth, and Time Increaſe: With ſeven Peas, and three Beans, I have, in four Years time, raiſed Seed enough to ſtock a Piece of Ground, out of which I gather, yearly, a ſufficient Quantity for my Uſe, beſides preſerving freſh Seed. No doubt, Sir, ſaid I, but, when right Means are taken, Proſperity will attend. By that time, having eaten ſufficiently of the Soup, he himſelf would carry the Remains to the young Man in the Kitchen, and fetch in the boiled Meat and Oyſter-ſawce, which he brought in another Shell much of the ſame Nature with that which the Soup was ſerv'd in, but ſomething ſhallower, which eat as delicious as Houſe-Lamb.

Having done with that, he fetches in the other Half of the Beaſt roaſted, and ſeveral Sorts of delicate Pickles which I never eat of before, and Muſhrooms, but of a curious Colour, Flavour, and Taſte: Theſe, ſaid he, are the natural Product of a particular Spot of Ground; where, at a certain time of the Year, he ſaid, he gathered, for the Space of ſix Days only, three Sizes of Muſhrooms: For though they were all Buttons, and fit to pickle; by that time he had gathered all, he had alſo to ſtew, and ſome about four Inches over, which he broil'd; and they eat as choice as any Veal-cutlet.

Theſe Pickles, Sir, ſaid I, though far exceeding any I ever did eat in *Europe*, are really, at this time,

time, needleſs; the Meat wanting nothing to raiſe its Reliſh; no Fleſh being more delicious.

Having done with that, I offer'd to take it away, but he in no-wiſe would permit me; ſo went away with it himſelf, and brought the Fowls, at which I was ſomewhat vex'd; for I fear'd I ſhould find no Room in my Stomach for any, having eat ſo heartily of the Meat: But having, at his preſent Requeſt, taſted them, my Appetite renew'd at their inexpreſſible Deliciouſneſs; ſo I fell to eating afreſh.

Having done with that Diſh, the young Man, having nothing to do in the Kitchen, came, and was bid to take away, and fall-to: In the mean time, the good old Man fetch'd us, out of his Dairy, a ſmall Cheeſe of his own making, which being ſet down, he related to us the unaccountable Manner he came by the Antelopes which ſupply'd him with the Milk it was made with; which introduced ſeveral weighty Remarks on the wonderful Acts of Providence, and the Strictneſs of the Obligations we lie under to our great Benefactor; likewiſe the vaſt Encouragement we have to love and ſerve God, the Benefits and Comforts of a clear Conſcience, as alſo the ineſtimable Treaſure of Content: From that he epitomiz'd the different Tempers and Diſpoſitions of Men, much commending timely Education, as being a Means to reverſe and change evil Inclinations; highly praiſing the Charity of thoſe pious People, who chuſe to beſtow good Schooling upon poor Folks Children, before Clothing, and even Food; the firſt being rather the moſt neceſſary, and the laſt the eaſieſt to come at.

That Diſcourſe being ended, he inquired very carefully after the State of his dear native Country, which, he ſaid, he left fifty Years ago in a very indulgent Diſpoſition. I gave him the beſt Account

I could at that time of all the Tranſactions that had happened in *England* ſince his Abſence. The Relation of paſt Evils, ſaid he, is but like Pictures of Earthquakes and Shipwrecks, which affect the Mind but ſlightly: And tho' I think myſelf out of any Prince's Power, yet I ſhall always partake with my Countrymens Grief: Pray be explicit; What King have we now? A complete Patriot, and Father to his Subjects, ſaid I; both tender-hearted and merciful, encouraging Virtue, and ſuppreſſing Vice, a Promoter of Religion, and an Example of Charity. Then, ſaid he, in a manner which expreſſed Zeal and Joy, Long may that pious Monarch live, and his bleſſed Poſterity for ever grace the *Britiſh* Throne! And may *Old England*, by its faithful Obedience and Loyalty, henceforth atone for its paſt Rebellions, that it may remove that execrable Reproach it now lies under! To which we all ſaid, *Amen.* Then he filled up the Shell we drank out of, and drank good King *George*'s Health, which was ſucceeded with that of the Royal Family, and Proſperity to the Church. Thus ended a moſt delicious and ſplendid Dinner, and a Converſation both delightful and inſtructive: But, having not as then mentioned any-thing about his own Hiſtory, which I exceedingly longed to inquire into, I begg'd him to inform us by what Accident he came hither, and how he had ſo long maintain'd a good State of Health. To which he anſwered, Time would not permit him to relate his own Hiſtory, being very long, and the Remainder of the Day too ſhort; but that he would, before we parted, give it me in Writing; having, for want of other Occupation, made a Memorial: But as to the maintaining of his Health, he would tell me by Word of Mouth. The Receipt, ſaid he, is both ſhort and eaſy; yet I fear you will not be

able

able to follow it: Look you, you muſt uſe none but wholſome Exerciſes, obſerve a ſober Diet, and live a pious Life: Now, if you can confine yourſelf to this way of Living, I'll be bound, that you will both preſerve your Health, and waſte leſs Money: But, what's more valuable than all that, you will not endanger your precious Soul. I return'd him Thanks for his good Advice, and promiſed him I would obſerve it as ſtrictly as I could. I am afraid, reply'd he, that will not be at all: You have too many powerful Obſtacles, the World and the Fleſh, from whom your Affections muſt be intirely withdrawn, and all Commerce prohibited, which is morally impoſſible whilſt living: Therefore, ſince you are obliged to converſe with the World, I will give you a few Cautions, which, if rightly taken, may be of Uſe to you.

Make not the World your Enemy, nor rely too much on its Fidelity.

Be not too free with your Friend: Repetitions of Favours often wear out Friendſhip.

Waſte not your Vigour or Subſtance on Women, leſt Weakneſs and Want be your Reward.

Secrets are not ſafe in a Woman's Breaſt; 'tis a Confinement the Sex can't bear.

Paſs no Contract over Liquor; Wine overcomes Reaſon, and dulls the Underſtanding.

He who games puts his Money in Jeopardy, and is not ſure of his own.

There's but little Honour to wager on ſure Grounds, and leſs Wiſdom to lay upon a Chance.

And in all your Dealings take this for a conſtant Rule:

He whom unlawful Means advance to Gain,
Inſtead of Comfort, finds a conſtant Pain:
What e'en by lawful Arts we do poſſeſs,
Old Age and Sickneſs make it comfortleſs.
Be rul'd by me, not to increaſe your Store
By Means unjuſt; for 'twill but make you poor.
Take but your Due, and never covet more.

I return'd him Thanks for his good Morals, the Copy of which I begg'd he would give me in Writing, for my better putting them in Practice; to which he readily conſented, wiſhing I might obſerve them; and being very ſure that I ſhould reap a conſiderable Benefit thereby, both here and hereafter.

The Day being pretty far ſpent, I was oblig'd to think of going, which griev'd me much; for I was ſo taken with his Company, that if I had not had a Father and Mother, whoſe Years requir'd my Preſence, I would have ſpent the reſt of my Days with him. I was ſo delighted with his Company, and pleaſed with his way of Living, that I almoſt overlook'd my Duty; but, after a Struggle with my Inclination, I was oblig'd to yield to Nature. Thus, having expreſs'd my Vexation to leave ſo good a Man, I took my Leave. The good old Man, perceiving my Regret to leave him, could not conceal his to part with me. Indeed, ſaid he, with Tears in his Eyes, I ſhould have been very glad to have had a Fellow-creature in this ſolitary Iſland, eſpecially one whom I think poſſeſs'd of a good Inclination; which I perceive you have, by your Reluctance at leaving this innocent Garden of Life. I imagine that you have Relations in the World that may ſtand in need of you; Heaven protect you, and ſend you ſafe to them! I don't imagine that you will ever ſee this Iſland again; nor would

would I adviſe you to venture, the Approach of it is ſo dangerous: Therefore, before you go, let me ſhew you ſome of the Rarities with which it abounds. I told him, I was afraid Time would not permit; but as he ſaid, that about an Hour or two would do, and we had Day-light enough, I went along with him.

Going out, and ſeeing the Guns ſtand behind the Door, I aſk'd what he did with them. I keep them, ſaid he, for a Trophy of Providence's Victory over my Enemies, and a Monument of my fourth miraculous Deliverance. As we went along, he related to us the Manner in which he had been ſacrilegiouſly robb'd once by *Indians*; villainouſly inveſted twice by Pirates; the Ruffians having combin'd to carry him away, like a Slave, to their own Country, and there make a Shew of him, as if he had been a Monſter.

Talking, we walk'd under ſeveral of the before-mention'd Cluſters of Trees which proceed from one ſingle Plant: Being come to one larger than the reſt, and which he ſaid he frequented moſt, it being the largeſt in the Iſland; This, ſaid he, covers, with its own Branches, a whole Acre of Land; ſo made ſeveral Remarks on the wonderful Works of Nature; which, ſaid he, were all intended for the Uſe and Pleaſure of Man; every-thing in the Univerſe containing ſuch different Virtues and Properties as were requiſite to render Life happy. From that he made ſeveral moral Reflections on the fatal Effects of Diſobedience, which is accounted a ſlight Breach in Duty, but is the Mother of all Sins.

That Diſcourſe held for a conſiderable time, till a Parcel of each different Kind of Monkeys, having met, fell to fighting, obſerving an admirable Order during the Fray; which withdrew our Admiration from

from the preceding Subject, and ſtopt us awhile to obſerve them.

The Scuffle was very diverting whilſt it laſted, which was but a ſhort time; for they happened to perceive us, at which they parted, each Sort running to their own Quarters, which were not very diſtant from one another, ſo that from it they could ſee each other's Motions. I am ſorry, ſaid I, the Battle was ſo ſoon over; they cuffed one another ſo prettily, that I could have ſtood an Hour to ſee them. If you like the Sport, ſaid the old Man, I can ſoon ſet them at it again. With that he takes out of his Breeches Pocket ſome roaſted Roots, which he commonly carried about him to throw at them when he went that way, which made them leſs ſhy of him.

Having broke the Roots in Bits, he lays them down in their Sight; for they on both Sides were peeping from under the Leaves of the Trees where they harbour'd: Then he cuts a Score of Sticks, about the Bigneſs of one's Finger, and near a Foot and an half long, and lays them over the Bits of Roots: Then we retir'd to ſome ſmall Diſtance, and hid ourſelves behind the Trees.

We were no ſooner out of Sight but that they haſtened to the Meat; the green Monkeys, having leſs Ground to go, were at them firſt; yet never ſtopt, but went on to hinder the others Approach, who vigorouſly ſtrove to gain Ground. The Struggle was hard, and the Victory often wavering; each Party alternately gave way: At laſt the grey Sort kept the Advantage, and drove their Adverſaries back, who, being come where the Sticks lay, immediately took them up, and charged their Enemies with a freſh Courage, like a yielding Army that has received new Forces: Thus, with their Clubſters in the Front, they fell on their Adverſaries

verſaries with great Vigour, knocking them down like our *Engliſh* Mob at an Election; ſo drove them back again almoſt to their own Quarters.

In the mean time Stragglers of both the Kinds, who had not joined with the main Bodies of the Armies, ſeeing the Coaſts clear, and the Proviſions unguarded, unanimouſly fell to plunder, and quietly did eat what their Comrades fought for; which the Combatants perceiving, left off fighting, and of one Accord turn'd upon the Plunderers, who, by that time having devoured the Booty, left them the Field without contending any farther.

The Battle being over, the old Gentleman would have us to go on, leſt, ſaid he, they ſhould fall to it again out of Revenge; for thoſe Creatures are very ſpiteful.

Having diſperſed them by our advancing, as intended, we walked from under the Trees at the Outſide, to have a better View of the Rock, which in ſome Places, he ſaid, changes its Form as one approaches it: And, as he ſaid, being got clear of the Trees, we ſaw at a Diſtance, as it were, a conſiderable Number of Buildings, and here-and-there ſomething like Steeples, which repreſented an handſome City; and ſeemingly the Houſes appeared ſo plain, that, had I not been appris'd of the Illuſion, I ſhould have taken it for ſuch; but *Alvarado* and the young Fellow could not be perſuaded but what we ſaw were really Buildings, and even in the Iſland, tho' the old Gentleman made us ſtop awhile, the better to obſerve everything: Then bid us keep our Eyes fixed at what we looked at, and go on: We perceived every Particular of what we obſerv'd to change its Form; that which at firſt ſeem'd to be fronting, ſhewed itſelf either ſideways or backwards; and ſo of every

Object, till, being come at a certain Diſtance, all the Agreeableneſs of the Perſpective, of a ſudden, turned into its real Shape like a Phantom; which, whilſt viſible, ſcreens that which it ſtands before; but, by its vaniſhing, leaves it diſcovered.

Being come as near the Rock as the Lake that parts it would permit, we could diſcern nothing in it that could in the leaſt ſoften its Ruggedneſs, or give it a more agreeable Aſpect than thoſe which are repreſented in the Pictures of Shipwrecks.

The old Gentleman, thereupon, made ſeveral learned Obſervations on the Alterations that Diſtance works upon Objects, and ſhew'd how eaſily our Organs of Sight may be deceiv'd; drawing from thence this Inference, That we ought not to be too poſitive of the Reality of what we ſee afar off, nor to affirm for Truth that which we only heard of.

Having ended that Diſcourſe, he carried us to the other Side of the jetting Part of a Rock, which, advancing like a Baſtion of a fortified Wall, ſcreen'd from our Eyes a ſecond Piece of Wonder; a fine Rainbow, iſſuing, as it were, out of the Mouth of a Giant, lying on a Rock, reaching quite over the Lake: At the Bottom of it I could not but ſtop to admire the various Colours it conſiſted of, which far exceeded, in Beauty and Livelineſs, any I ever ſaw in the Sky. I preſently imagin'd that it proceeded from the Rays of the Sun falling upon ſome Pond, or other ſtanding Water, whoſe Reflexions roſe, and met the Tops; which cauſed that beautiful Circle. But *Alvarado*, who, by what he had ſeen before, concluded that the Iſland was inchanted, ſaid, it was another Illuſion, which the Place was full of; and would have gone away, but that the old Man fell a laughing, and ſaid, 'Tis a Sign you ſeldom inquire into natural Cauſes: Well, do but come a little nearer to it, and you will find that which you

you term an Illuſion, is the natural Effect of all Fountains when the Sun ſhines.

Being come to the Place it proceeded from, it prov'd, as he ſaid, only a Fountain, but of the cleareſt and ſweeteſt Water that ever was taſted; but the Place it iſſued out of was changed from the Likeneſs of a Giant to that of ſome ſtrange ſort of Creature; which, tho' having no particular Reſemblance, yet would bear being compared to ſeveral different Things. The old Man's Opinion was, that it reſembled a Whale ſpirting Water out at one Noſtril. *Alvarado* ſuppoſed it was more like an Horſe or a Cow; and rather the laſt, there being Horns plain to be ſeen. For my Part, I could find no proper Similitude to it, but that of an old ruin'd Monument, which formerly they built over the Heads of Springs. *Timothy Anchors* (for that was the Name of the young Fellow that was with us) being aſked, what he could make of it? Why really, ſaid he, nothing, unleſs it be an old patch'd-up Pump that ſtands at the End of my Mother's Court in *Roſemary-lane* (which every Spring runs out of itſelf); which Compariſon made us all to laugh.

Thus we differ'd in our Opinions as to the Likeneſs; yet agreed, that was the fineſt Fountain, and the beſt Water, we ever ſaw or drank. What ſurpris'd me moſt, was, the Force wherewith it ſprung from the Rock that ſtood full five Yards from the Place it fell on, which was another Subject of Admiration; for certainly the Arts of Men could not have invented nor completed a more compact or pleaſanter Baſon, tho' it had been for a Fountain to adorn a Monarch's Garden: Indeed there were no Maſons, nor any expert Artiſts exquiſite Works to be ſeen, but a great deal of Nature's matchleſs Underſtanding: There Regularity, Dimenſion, and Proportion, concerted to make it uſeful, convenient, and agreeable.

The

The Baſon was very near round, about eight Feet Diameter, a Bank around it near a Foot high, and as broad at Top, ſlanting gently to the Bottom, both Inſide and Outſide, which made a moſt pleaſant and uniform Bank, adorn'd with various ſmall Flowers and Herbs of divers beautiful Colours, and moſt fragrant Smells.

Having view'd with Pleaſure and Amazement ſuch Irregularity in a wild and uninhabited Place, I walk'd about it as long as the time I could ſtay would permit: I propoſed going, but the old Gentleman, taking me by the Hand, ſtopt me: You have, ſaid he, beſtow'd a conſiderable time in obſerving the Fertility of this Iſland; now pray allow one Minute for Conſideration: The Object you have been admiring all this time is as wonderful and ſurpriſing, as beautiful and pleaſant: You ſee this Fountain, which runs ſtiff, and as large as your Thumb, and therefore by Computation may be allow'd to give near 100 Gallons of Water in an Hour: Now it runs Night and Day; it neither decreaſes, nor runs over its Bank, but keeps to the ſame Height. This, as you ſay, Sir, ſaid I, is really worth inquiring into: So I went ſeveral times round it, ſearching for the Place, whereby the Overplus of the Complement did iſſue; but could not diſcover it. Come, ſaid he, ſeek no more for that which Nature has ſo well conceal'd: I have ſpent many Hours in that Inquiry, and ſtill remain ignorant; but have found the Place out of which it runs into a fine Fiſh-pond, about a Mile inland; we will make it in our Way to the Lake; we may look at it as we go by, but can make no long Stay. So we went on.

Going along, we came by an hollow Part of the Rock, which went in like an Alcove, with a great many Concavities in it in Rows one above another,

as

as round Niches where Figures ſtand. Now, ſaid the old Man, we are here, I will entertain you with an inviſible Chorus of harmonious Voices, little inferior to Hautboys, Trumpets, or other melodious Muſic: Here I twice come and pay my Devotions each Day. *Alvarado*, who, by what he had already ſeen, was prepoſſeſs'd that the Iſland was full of Inchantments, was now certain of it; and look'd upon that Place in the Rock to be the Receptacle of Fiends, and evil Spirits; ſo would by no means ſtay; but takes his Leave, ſaying, he was not very curious of ſupernatural Things. Supernatural, ſaid the old Man, you can't well call it, though to you it may be very amazing: It is therefore well deſerving your Sight; I mean your Hearing; the Eyes having no Share in the Entertainment: We ſhall only ſing a few Pſalms; I am ſure there can be no Harm in that, but rather Good, being an holy Exerciſe in divine Worſhip, in which all good Souls ought to join. That may be, ſaid *Alvarado*; but I love to ſee thoſe with whom I worſhip: I don't think myſelf as yet Company for Spirits. As for your Part, ſaid *Alvarado* (ſpeaking to me), you may do what you pleaſe; but take care your Curioſity don't coſt you too dear. *Tim* and I will wait for you in the Boat; but pray be not too long before you come. So, having return'd tne old Gentleman Thanks for his kind Entertainment, they went away; at which the good Man was much affronted. What, ſaid he, do your Friends imagine I deal with Spirits? Beſides, where did they ever hear, that Devils lov'd to ſing Pſalms? for here ſhall nothing elſe be ſung: I would not for the World, that thoſe admirable Echoes, that hitherto have repeated nothing but the Almighty's Praiſes, ſhould be polluted with the Sound of any profane Words. I endeavoured to excuſe their Timorouſneſs, ſaying,

It was not a Failing peculiar to themſelves only, but to many beſides. The old Man allow'd it, attributing the Cauſe thereof to a very pernicious Cuſtom Nurſes have to frighten Children when they cry, with Buggabos, and ſuch Things, to make them them quiet; which frightful Ideas often make ſuch deep Impreſſions on their puerile Minds, that, when they come to mature Age, it is hardly worn out; which intimidates many.

That Diſcourſe being ended, we advanced as near that Part of the Rock as the Lake would permit, which in that Place was not above ſeven or eight Feet broad; ſo that we were within the Concavity of the Rock. Now, ſaid the old Man, let us ſit down on this Bank, and ſing the hundredth-and-ſeventeenth Pſalm. Indeed, Sir, ſaid I, I don't know it by Heart, and I have no Pſalm-book about me. Well, then, ſaid he, I'll ſing myſelf: So begins; but with ſuch a clear and loud Voice, managed with ſo much Skill and Judgment, that it exceeded all the Singing I ever heard before; and was repeated by ſuch a Number of melodious Echoes, that one would have believed there were a hundred Voices in Chorus.

The Melody ſo tranſported me, that I willingly would have ſpent not only the Remainder of the Day, but the ſucceeding alſo; the Ecſtaſy having quite put out of my Mind the Neceſſity of my going, and the Danger of delaying: But the good Man having ſung an Evening Hymn after the Pſalm, which he ſaid he ſung every Night, he takes me by the Hand: Now, ſaid he, is not this Emulation? Who would not ſing with ſuch a Chorus of Choriſters as you might imagine was there? Indeed, Sir, ſaid I, this has ſo great Reſemblance to the Relation we have given us in Holy Hiſtory of the ſuperior Joys the Bleſſed poſſeſs in Heaven, that I thought

thought myſelf already there; for which Reaſon I would willingly end my Days here. That's impoſſible, ſaid the old Gentleman; nor can you ſpend here many more Moments: I have the Fiſh-pond to ſhew you yet; come, let's go. So we went on about fifty Paces from thence more inland: We ſaw at a ſmall Diſtance, between the Trees, a Parcel of Fowls like Ducks, but conſiderably larger, which flew away at our Approach from the Pond towards them. He told me how he came by the old one that bred them, of which he was robbed.

At length being come to the Pond, I was ſurpriſed at the Clearneſs of the Water, at the Bottom of which ſeemed to be large Rubies, Emeralds, Iacinths, and other colour'd Stones; till, being come to the Brink of it, thoſe which I took for precious Stones, prov'd to be Fiſhes by their ſwimming about, which, to my thinking, look'd like Stars ſhooting from Place to Place in the Sky. Having ſpent ſeveral Minutes in admiring the ſurpriſing Nature and Beauty of the Fiſhes, I took Notice of the Pond, which was about forty Yards in Length, and near thirty in Breadth: Its Form was a broken Oval, ſinking in and out here-and-there, which made it the more agreeable: All round it grew divers Sorts of Herbs intermix'd with Flowers of different Colours, and here-and-there a Baſket on Sticks, which the old Man told me he made and ſet there for his Ducks to breed in. The Day being far ſpent, the old Man, after having ſhewed me the Places at one Side of the Pond wherein the Baſon emptied itſelf, as alſo the other Side whereby the Pond ran into the Lake, takes me by the Hand: Come, ſaid he, I will keep you no longer; Night comes on apace, and the Retreat from this Iſland is dangerous; therefore I would have you improve the ſhort Remains of the Day, to avoid the Dangers the Darkneſs

neſs of the Night may lead you into: So let us go home, that I may give you the Memorial I have promiſed you, and then my Bleſſing, and hearty Prayers for your ſafe Departure, and happy Arrival. So we went to his Habitation, where he gave me a Roll of Parchment.

Here it is, ſaid he, in a rough and unpolite Language; for I did not write it out of Oſtentation, or to exert my Parts, but to keep me in mind of the many Mercies I have receiv'd from Heaven ever ſince my Youth, and to record the wonderful Effects of Providence; that if ever theſe Writings ſhould have the Luck to fall into the Hands of Men after my Deceaſe, they might be an Encouragement to the Deſtitute, and a Comfort to the Afflicted, that he who rightly applies himſelf, and firmly truſts in the Almighty, ſhall, at his Extremity, find Relief: And now my Intent is in ſome meaſure anſwered, expecting you will reviſe and publiſh it when you come to *Old England*. I muſt injoin you not to give it out as my own Dictation, but an Hiſtory taken from Heads out of my Memorial; for I have been obliged to inſert Particulars, and uſe ſuch Expreſſions, without which the Account I give of myſelf would have been imperfect; and which, being related as by me, may chance to be accounted Self-flattery, which is a Cenſure I would willingly avoid. I told him he might depend upon it, I ſhould always, and on all Accounts, be very tender of any thing that could in the leaſt leſſen the Merit of the Subject, or tarniſh the Luſtre of the Hiſtory.

With that the good Man takes me in his open Arms, and embraces me over and over with all the Tenderneſs Words and Actions could expreſs; ſaying, with Tears in his Eyes, that my Exit was a renewing of his paſt Grief, and would for a conſiderable

derable time damp the Pleaſures he before my coming did enjoy in his Solitude; ſince now he again has had the Comfort to converſe with one of his dear Countrymen, after full fifty Years being ſever'd from human Society. The Height of his Grief having for ſome Moments ſtopt the Utterance of his Words, he ſighing laid his Head upon my Neck, ſqueezing me cloſe in his Arms.

This moſt tender and moving Action moved me to a reciprocal Grief: Never did any Man reflect with more Reluctancy than when I parted with that good old Man, who having recovered in ſome Meaſure his former Firmneſs of Mind, his Soul being again reſign'd, we repeated our Embraces with a mutual Affection. Then I took my Leave; but he would not part with me there; he would by all means wait on me to the Lake I was to wade over to come at the Rock, on the other Side of which the Boat waited for me: And when I came thither, he would alſo have waded over with me, that he might have the Satisfaction of ſeeing me ſafe from the dangerous Rock; but I would in no-wiſe permit him. Thus having prevailed upon him to ſtay behind, I prepared to wade over: So, after a few more Embraces, I croſs'd the Lake, and came to my impatient Companions, who receiv'd me with heavy Reprimands for truſting myſelf ſo long alone with that Necromancer; for nothing, ſaid they, ſhall ever perſuade me a Man can have ſuch Plenty of Dainties with only the Help of Nature: No, no, he may talk of Providence as much as he pleaſes; he applies to the Black Art; and thoſe Voices he calls Echoes are his inviſible Imps, which (if Truth be known) are often employ'd in raiſing the Wind, and cauſing Storms, which render theſe Seas often ſo dangerous: And it has been obſerv'd, that few or no Ships come near thoſe Rocks,

Rocks, and eſcape being ſtav'd. For my part, I aſſure you I don't think myſelf ſafe, whilſt within the Reach of his Inchantments. With that he takes one of the Oars out of young *Tim*'s Hand, and falls to rowing. Indeed, ſaid *Tim*, as you ſay, he look'd very much like a Conjurer with his long Hair and Beard; and I believe he is conjuring now. See, here is bad Weather coming; let us make haſte from theſe Rocks.

Even as he ſaid, in ſhort, ſo it happened; for in a little time after the Wind roſe, and the Sea began to be a little rough; ſo that I was forced to take the Hitcher, and with it keep the Boat from the Rocks, whither the Waves very often drove us; but, ſtanding out to Sea, the Wind grew more calm, and fair for the Continent: I took one of the Oars, and, by Help of our Sail, in a ſhort time we got ſafe to Shore; where being arriv'd very much fatigued, we put up at the firſt Cottage, which was inhabited by an old Man and Woman, *Indians*, where we dreſs'd our Fiſh, and went to Supper; which was ſcarce over, but I was hurried on board, the Wind being tack'd about, and fair for our Departure.

We weigh'd Anchor on the ſeventeenth Day of *May* 1724. and ſtood out to Sea, and ſailed South and by Eaſt till we arriv'd on the 26th at *Panama* on *Terra Firma*, after meeting with ſome ſtormy Weather. Here we began to traffick, in our Way home, for ſome Corn, neceſſary for our following Voyage; as alſo Cotton, ſome Metals, Reſin, Gums, and Pepper. Our Stay was not long here; for we ſailed from thence on the fifth of *June*, the Wind being then very favourable: But we had not ſailed above twenty Leagues, when we met with a violent Storm, which laſted ſome Hours, and the Wind blowing hard at North North-eaſt; wherein we had the Misfortune to loſe our Surgeon, one

John

John Davis, who, being imprudently upon Deck; was waſh'd overboard by a prodigious Wave coming in at the Forecaſtle: Our Ship receiv'd no Damage in that Storm; but our Loſs of Mr. *Davis* was very great, and worſe than if any other Man on board had been miſſing; for we might alſo call him our Chaplain, as well as Surgeon: And by his exemplary, pious Life, during the Time he belong'd to our Ship, he might really be call'd a Divine. He was a Man, who, as he told me, had been educated at *Hart-Hall*, *Oxon*, in his early Days, and deſign'd for the ſacred Robe: But his Genius very much inclining to thoſe moſt pleaſant Studies, *viz.* Phyſick and Surgery, he afterwards made them his Practice; but meeting with ſome Misfortunes about the Thirty-fifth Year of his Life, he left *England* in the Year 1711. and embark'd on board the *John and Mary* for *New England*, where he liv'd till the Year 1723. when our Ship arriv'd at that Country, at that time wanting a Surgeon: For our own died juſt at our Approach near the Continent. Our Captain, on Inquiry, having an excellent Character of Mr. *Davis*, agreed with him for our Voyage till we return'd back thither again. I think it but juſt to eternize his Memory in theſe Memoirs, and give him the Character which he merited.

He was a pious good Man, ſober, juſt, and virtuous; ready to ſerve, but never to offend any Man. His Morals were inſtructive to all thoſe who knew him, and his conſtant Exhortation (while on board our Ship) to frequent daily Prayers, was the Reaſon that we eſteem'd him the Doctor of our Souls, as well as a Surgeon to our Bodies: Nay, which is ſtill more, whilſt he was with us, tho' he never enter'd into ſacred Orders, yet he told us, he thought it his Duty to give us the beſt Inſtructions he was capable of, for the Preſervation of our Souls and

Bodies,

Bodies, both which were always in Danger: And accordingly, after divine Service (as I may call it) was perform'd by him in a very ſolemn manner, he would frequently diſcourſe on the Nature and Heinouſneſs of the Sin of Man, which occaſioned the Sufferings of Chriſt; on the Terrors of Hell, and the Joys of Heaven; as alſo on the glorious Creation of the World, ſetting forth the Works of Omnipotence in very lively Colours, telling the Advantage, Pleaſure, and Beauty, that attended a godly Life. Sometimes his Diſcourſes would be on Natural Philoſophy, which were extremely well deliver'd: At other times on ſome of the Sciences, moſt of which he well underſtood, and to which we gave very great Attention, as being deſirous of ſuch uſeful Knowlege: In ſhort, his Death was greatly lamented by the Captain as well as myſelf, and indeed by all the Ship's Crew; for he was a Man of a quick Thought, and lively Apprehenſion; had an univerſal Knowlege in Things, intirely free from Reſervedneſs, but of perfect Humility and Condeſcenſion; moſt agreeably entertaining in his Converſation, and dear to all that ever knew him.

Thus, having given an imperfect Character of that great Man, to whoſe Memory I owe ſo much, I ſhall proceed to a further Deſcription of our Voyage. As to the Coaſts on thoſe Seas, I think it needleſs to make any mention thereof, they having been ſo well deſcribed already by our modern Geographers, nor is it any-ways uſeful to my Purpoſe; ſo that I ſhall intirely omit it, and only give an Account of the Places where we traded or touch'd at for freſh Proviſions or Neceſſaries, and remark what happen'd moſt worthy our Notice in our Voyage home to *England*.

The Weather proving now more favourable, I began to peruſe the Memorials of my good old

Hermit: But oh! with what moving Sympathy did I ſhare with him in the Multitude of his Misfortunes during his minor Years! Nor could I leſs ſympathize with him in the Ecſtaſies of his hermitical Life. I read with Pleaſure and Amazement what he had laborioufly tranſcrib'd, being at that time doubtful whether it would ever be peruſed by any Mortal; where he ſet forth a continued Series of Misfortunes, as if link'd together by Divine Providence (whilſt he lived in the wiſe World, as he called it): And in this Account, during his Abode on that deſolate Iſland, denotes that the Omnipotent Being had always an immediate Direction in every Circumſtance or Point of Time. I was more and more aſtoniſh'd and amaz'd by this good Man's Precepts, who has abandon'd the World, content to live in a deſolate and loneſome Iſland, uninhabited by any Mortal but himſelf; where he has had the Space of fifty Years to reflect and contemplate on the Follies and Misfortunes of Man; during which time his Maxims were always his Rule of Life in every Caſe. Oh! may I once more ſee that dear old Man, whoſe Habitation is free from all anxious Cares, from Oppreſſion and Uſury, and all the Evils that attend this populous World! There would I abide, and never depart from that happy Solitude which he ſo peaceably enjoys—— But whither am I running?——Theſe Contemplations have made me forget the Remarks of my Voyage.

We ſailed from *Panama* on the 6th Day of *June*, and had frequent Thunder and Lightning, attended with ſome Rain; but nothing elſe extraordinary happen'd. On the 15th we made *Gorgona-Bay* in *Peru*, where our Boat went on ſhore to a Village on the Main, with twenty Hands well arm'd, reſolving to get ſome freſh Proviſions at any Rate; for

for we began to be in want, having taken in but very little at *Panama*. It is a low Land, full of Mangrove-Trees, and, within Land, pretty high: The Village was but poor; however, they brought away Six Hogs, and Four Goats; ſome Limes, and Plantains. Not far from thence are ſome Gold Mines, but of no very great Note, as we were inform'd by ſome *Indians*. They are a very warlike People who live on that Coaſt, and often engage one another with Clubs and Darts made of hard Wood. The Iſland is about ſix Leagues in Length. There are Monkeys, Lizards, Hares, and *Guiney* Pigs; alſo, ſeveral Sorts of Snakes, ſome of which are as big as one's Leg; ſo that it is dangerous to walk in ſome Parts of the Iſland. One of our Men happen'd to be bit by one, and did not live above ſix Hours after; though his Death had been prevented, I believe, had we not met with that Misfortune of loſing Mr. *Davis*, our Surgeon. Here, alſo, we caught ſome Mullets, and ſeveral Sorts of Fiſh, extremely good, tho' unknown to us as to their Names. In this Iſland there is a Creature which the *Indians* call a *Mundago*, but the *Spaniards* a *Sloth*, which I think is its propereſt Name; for it is a Creature which ſeems to ſleep as it walks, by its ſlow Motion: And it is reported, that it eats the Leaves of Trees, which are its only Food; but is ſo prodigious lazy, that when it has clear'd one Tree of its Leaves, it will be almoſt ſtarv'd to Death before it attempts to climb another: In ſhort, it is a very ugly Creature, and ſeems to be of the Monkey-kind by its Make; but its Hair is thicker and longer, nor is it ſo agreeable to look at, and is different in its Nature. Here we alſo got freſh Water, and Wood; for there are very good Brooks on that Iſland, and Wood enough. While we lay near the Iſland, I went aſhore; and, in my Converſation with

with a *Spaniard*, he related to me the following Account of one *Thomas Jenkins*, a *Lancaſhire* Man, who was Boatſwain on board a Merchant's Ship, whoſe Name I have ſince forgot, who was left on that Iſland, and lived alone there Two Years and Three Months; but was firſt ſeen on that Iſland by ſome *Indians* who came from the Main for Oyſters, and other Shell-fiſh, which they frequently gather for the *Spaniards*. He made his Eſcape from them, and hid himſelf in the Woods; fearing that they would carry him to the *Spaniards*; and, by that means, he might be made a Slave: Chuſing rather Solitude, than to enter into Bondage for his Life. However, an *Engliſh* Ship, trading on that Coaſt, had Notice of it from the *Indians*; and, imagining that he might be an *Engliſhman* caſt away, or ſet on ſhore there (as he really was) by ſome Pirates who had been in thoſe Seas; they ſent their Boat, with Six Hands, to the Iſland, in ſearch of him. They took their Speaking-Trumpet with them, and, by that means, after about Six Hours Stay on the Iſland, they found him out. He told them, that, at his firſt being ſet on ſhore upon the Iſland, it ſeemed very melancholy, and frightful; when he began to reflect on the Barbarity of the Pirates, to leave him there without Proviſions, or any manner of Neceſſaries whereby he might ſupport himſelf (they leaving him only his Wearing Cloaths, and his Pocket Knife. If they had left him any Fire-Arms and Ammunition, his Caſe would not have been near ſo deſperate; becauſe he then might have not only defended himſelf againſt any Enemy, but likewiſe have kill'd ſome Goats, or Fowls, for his Subſiſtence). He alſo ſaid, that what made him very melancholy, was, to think his Habitation, and Place of Abode, was where he could have no human Society, and in an Iſland that he, at firſt, knew not whether there was

any-thing on it for his Subſiſtence, as never being on that Coaſt before. But the ſecond Day of his being there, he took a Survey of the Iſland, and found, that there were Monkeys, Goats, *&c.* and alſo good Fiſh. He dreaded, greatly, the Snakes, which were larger than he had ever ſeen before; however, as they endeavoured to get from him, he reſted pretty well ſatisfied; hoping there was no Beaſt of Prey to hurt him there; for fear of which, at firſt, he climbed up into a Pimento-Tree to ſleep. He was well pleaſed to find ſuch good Shell-fiſh, which was the only Food he liv'd on for the firſt five Days; when, by Accident, he caught a young Kid, which very much rejoiced him: But he was at a great Loſs for Fire to dreſs it; till, having nothing to employ himſelf with, but thinking he remember'd that he had heard, that the rubbing of two Pieces of Woon hard together produced Fire, he tried the Experiment: And, by rubbing two Pieces of Pimento-Wood together, did produce Fire (after the manner the *Indians* make uſe of it). He then made a Fire, as having Wood enough, and broiled Part of his Goat, which was a delicious Meal to him. He afterwards began to build himſelf a Hut to dwell in, where he liv'd, and dreſs'd his Fiſh, and Goats Fleſh; but could at firſt only broil it, till he had driven two Stakes in the Ground; where he roaſted it, with a wooden Spit. As to freſh Water, as I obſerved before, there were very good Brooks in the Valleys. At length he invented a Way, by Thickets, to enſnare a Goat ſometimes; which furniſhed him with Fleſh. Here were Cabbage-Trees, which furniſhed him with Sawce to his Meat, it being very agreeable, when ſeaſoned with the Fruit of the Pimento-Tree, which is much like *Jamaica* Pepper: But afterwards he could run a Goat down. Sometimes he had the good Luck to find ſome Eggs;

Eggs; for there were very good Fowls: He caught ſome young Teal alſo; and, by cutting their Wings, and keeping them always cut, he preſerved them in a Brook, juſt by his Hut, which he had incloſed. There they bred, and were tame. But being one Day gone a pretty Diſtance from his Hut, a great Number of Monkeys, finding them out, and that they could not fly away, deſtroy'd them all. His Cloaths were almoſt worn out, nay, his Shoes were quite gone, and had been for ſome time; but, to preſerve his Feet, he cut the Goat-ſkins in the Shape of Stockens, and ſewed them, or laced them up with Thongs of the ſame; and alſo laced the Foot-part, making Holes with his Knife for the Thongs, three or four times doubled together, to ſerve for Soals. The *Spaniard* told me, that he was ſo well inured to that way of Life, when he was taken from the Iſland, that it was a conſiderable time before he could reliſh either Drink, or any kind of Victuals, which was dreſſed on board the Ship. I gave the *Spaniard* an Account of the Hermit, to which he gave very great Attention.

So, having refreſhed ourſelves, we ſailed from hence, after a Stay of three Days, only, in the Bay; having got a pretty many Goats from the Iſland, and ſome Maize, or *Indian* Corn. From thence we ſteered for the *Gallapago* Iſlands, but, in our Paſſage, met with ſeveral Storms and Tornadoes, attended with very great Rains. Some of our Men began to be very ſickly, which we thought proceeded from their eating the Livers of ſome young Seels they had caught; they being unhealthy. After about three Days Sail, we met with frequent Calms. During this Voyage, one of our Negro Women, of which we had three on board, being with Child, and near her Time, was delivered of a fine Boy,

which was of a ſwarthy Colour. She had been on board us ever ſince we came from the *Brazils*, and proved very uſeful in waſhing our Linen, *&c.* but *Juno*, for that was her Name, proved with Child by one of our Men, whoſe Name was *Thomas Higgins:* I, with the Help of the other Two Negro Women which were on board, perform'd the Office of a Midwife, and delivered her. I had purchaſed a little Wine at *Panama*, which proved uſeful to mull for *Juno*, to comfort her in that Condition; alſo the other Negro Women, *Tom Higgins*, and I, drank One Bottle, after her Delivery; and we were really merry on that Occaſion. The Captain was ſomewhat diſpleaſed at this Accident; but being unwilling (in ſo long a Voyage, attended with ſo many Difficulties as we had met with) to inflict too heavy Puniſhments on his Men, he only obliged *Tom* to agree that he ſhould allow *Juno* Two Piſtoles, when ſhe went aſhore at *Brazil*, to take care of the Child. *Tom* readily agreed thereto, but had ſome Remorſe of Conſcience, and began to reflect; and was really very much concerned to think, that the Child got by him (though on a Negro, yet ſhe was a Woman, and the Child in Likeneſs of himſelf, and firmly believing that it was really begot by him, and no other Perſon) ſhould be bred up in *Paganiſm*. Accordingly, he grew very dull and melancholy at the Thoughts thereof, which he communicated to me; aſking my Advice about it. So I perſuaded him to be merry, and not caſt himſelf down; for that many ſuch Accidents had happen'd in the *Weſt-Indies*, before then, among the *Engliſhmen*, who never thought much of it afterwards. However, this had no Effect at all on him. He told me, that whatever Crimes other People had been guilty of, he could not reconcile himſelf thereunto. Finding him ſo very uneaſy,

I acquainted the Captain of it: Ay! ſays he, is *Tom* under ſo great a Concern about the Child's being not to be educated in the Chriſtian Religion? Yes, Sir, ſaid I; and I am apprehenſive that it will grow upon him very much to his Prejudice, he is ſo extremely concerned about it: For leſs Things than that, I have known People grow melancholy (as he ſeems to be); and they have entered into a State of Lunacy, and never could be brought to their former Reaſon, but have laid violent Hands on themſelves. As he is a very honeſt, good-natur'd Fellow (ſetting aſide this Slip), ſaid I, I wiſh ſome Expedient could be found out to make him eaſy. Well, then, Mr. *Dorrington*, ſays the Captain, we have the Common-Prayer Book on board; and 'tis Pity we loſt poor *John Davis*, our Surgeon and Chaplain: He could have chriſtened the Child; and that would have ſatisfied *Tom*. O, Sir, ſaid I, with your Leave, as we have no Chaplain belonging to the Ship, now Mr. *Davis* is dead; yet, as we are tolerated to bury our Dead, pray why may not we chriſten the Living, alſo? It can be no Crime to do a good Action. The Captain approved of what I ſaid; ſo I told him, with his Leave, I would be Chaplain, in that Caſe, as well as I had been Man-midwife before: But, Sir, ſaid I, there is an Obſtacle that will hinder us ſtill. He aſk'd me what that was? Why, Sir, ſaid I, we have neither Godfathers nor Godmothers; and you know that it is not accounted lawful to perform that Ceremony, which is one of the Sacraments, unleſs it be done with Order and Decency, as the Church directs. To which the Captain reply'd, Is there not Mr. *Clark*, our Lieutenant? I and he will ſtand Godfathers; and he ſhall, as he is *Clark* by Name, perform the Office of Clerk in the Ceremony. But, Sir, ſaid I, what muſt

we do for a Godmother? You know there ought to be one, and we have no Woman on board that is a Chriſtian. Well, then, ſaid the Captain, theſe Women we have on board, by a little Perſuaſion, may be willing to be chriſtened themſelves; and if they conſent, they are of Age, and therefore capable of anſwering for themſelves; by which means they may become Godmothers, on Occaſion, to the Child. So, accordingly, the Captain called for a Bottle of Wine, and ſent for *Diana*, one of the Negro Women, aged about Twenty-three Years. When ſhe came into the Cabin, the Captain filled a Glaſs of Wine, and gave it her: After ſhe had drank it, the Captain ſaid, So, *Diana*, 'tis to be hop'd that you won't be troubled with the Wantons, and play the Trick your Siſter *Juno* did. Pray, how does the Child do? To which ſhe anſwer'd, It be ver well, but it cry, cry, ver muſh, gret deal. Well, ſays the Captain, but, *Diana*, I ſent for you on another Occaſion: Do not you remember Mr. *Davis*, our Surgeon and Chaplain? Yes, ſays ſhe, me ver well know him; he give me very gret goot Stuff (meaning a Dram): But, ſays the Captain, you know, *Diana*, he was a very good Man, and us'd to tell you your Duty, and teach you how to ſay your Prayers. Yes, ſays ſhe, me ver well remember dat he be ver goot Man. Why, then, ſaid the Captain, *Diana*, what do you think of being made a Chriſtian, and chriſten'd as we Chriſtians are? Me mak Chriſtian (ſays ſhe) hou? Why, ſays the Captain, you know Mr. *Davis* taught you to read, and you learned to ſay your Prayers: They are very good Prayers, are they not? to pray to God. Yes, ſays ſhe; dey be ver goot Preyer; me love dem ver gret muſh. Well, then, ſays the Captain, are you willing to be good, and do as thoſe Prayers learn you to do? Yes, ſaid ſhe, me

be

be alway be ver goot, me be ver glat, me lern me Preyer, me lern more, me tank you. So, by the Captain's Advice, I read the publick Baptiſm of thoſe of riper Years, and baptized her; ſhe anſwering to the Queſtions by the Inſtruction of the Captain; and we chriſten'd her by the Name of *Elizabeth*, which was the Name of our Ship. As ſoon as the Ceremony was over, the Captain ordered *Elizabeth* to dreſs the Child in as decent a manner as ſhe could, and bring it to his Cabin: In the mean time, we drank the Bottle of Wine. As ſoon as the Child was dreſs'd, *Elizabeth* carried it to the Captain, who ſent for *Thomas Higgins*, and told him that *Diana* was chriſten'd; and that he himſelf, and the Lieutenant, were to ſtand Godfathers to his Son, and *Elizabeth* Godmother; and that it was to be chriſtened; and deſired to know what Name ſhould be given to the Child: To which he anſwered, his own, *viz. Thomas*. But I never ſaw ſuch an Alteration in any Man, in my Life, as I immediately obſerved in him: So ſuddenly it appear'd, that it ſurpris'd us all. For he, who was before dejected, even to the greateſt Degree imaginable, now appeared fully ſatisfied in his Mind; and Conſcience no longer ſeem'd to fly in his Face; but he became full of Mirth and Jollity. So, by the Captain's Order, I chriſtened the Child, in a very decent manner: The Captain and Lieutenant ſtood Godfathers, and *Elizabeth* ſtood Godmother. When the Ceremony was over, the Captain ſaid, *Tom*, as this Child was begot and born on board my Ship, and I am its Godfather; and as it is now a Chriſtian; I think it properly belongs to me (though I am not the Father of it) to ſee it brought up in a Chriſtian manner, which, if it pleaſe God to bleſs me with Life, I will ſee performed; and not only that, but will take care of it, if it lives, during my

Life, and ſee it well educated. So the Captain order'd Half a Goat to be roaſted; and he, the Lieutenant, and I, with *Tom* and *Elizabeth*, whom he permitted on that Occaſion, ſupp'd at his Table, and were very merry: Which ſo rejoiced *Elizabeth*, that ſhe, immediately after Supper, related what had happen'd to her Fellow Negro Woman, who was called *Antiope*; and they both went to *Juno*, and told her, that her Son was baptized by the Name of *Thomas*.

The Weather here was extremely hot in the Day-time; but there were cold Dews at Night, which were very dangerous: For Three of our Men died, in our Voyage to the *Galliapagoes*.

As we ſail'd, on the Twenty-fifth at Night, the Sea very much ſurpriſed us, it ſeeming to be as red as Blood; which occaſion'd *Stephen Jones*, who was upon the Watch, with ſome others, to call us up; for they had never ſeen the like before. When we came upon Deck, we ſuppoſed it to be a great Quantity of the Spawn of Fiſh ſwimming on the Water; it being very fair. Having paſſed the Line, we made the *Galliapagoes* on the Fifth of *July*, where we anchored about a Mile off the Shore, in a good ſmooth, ſandy Ground. We ſent our Boat aſhore for Water, but could find none. Some of our Men began to be ſick, but none of them died before we arrived at *Puna* Iſle, in *Peru*; from whence we ſailed a little way up the River *Guiaquil*, where we ſaw a great many Alligators, and ſold ſome of our Goods: But the *Spaniards* being jealous that we came as Spies, and belong'd to ſome other Ships on that Coaſt which were *Buccaniers*; we thought it beſt to leave that Place, having taken in ſome freſh Water, and a few Proviſions, to ſerve us to the Iſle of *Lobos*. We ſtood out to Sea, and made the Iſland of *St. Clara*, where we anchor'd on the Tenth

for

for that Night (our Ship proving crank, and ſailing very heavy): The next Morning, when we were preparing to ſail, we found that our Ship had ſprung a Leak; ſo that we were obliged to have one Hand at the Pump continually. Before we had ſailed Six Leagues, the Wind freſhen'd upon us, and the Sky look'd extraordinary black at North-eaſt, and it moved towards us; which made us take in our Top-ſails; and afterwards we reev'd our Mainſail, and Mizen; at which time it began to rain, and pour'd down, as if through a Sieve. The Sea ſeem'd as if it had been all on Fire, by the prodigious Thunder and Lightning. It then being Night, the Elements over Head look'd moſt diſmally black, but all round the Horizon was as red as Blood: The Waves, which ſeem'd to daſh againſt the Clouds, by the Violence of the Wind, ſparkled like Lightning, which, together with the Thunder, made a terrible Noiſe: At laſt, breaking in upon our Deck, it carried away one of our Anchors; and we durſt not bring our Ship to the Wind, for fear of her foundering; it being dangerous, in a Storm, to turn a Ship backward and forward: So we were obliged to lie in the Trough of the Sea. But the Wind and Rain abating, we obſerv'd, to our great Joy, a *Corpus Sanct* at the Top of our Spindle: Theſe *Corpus Sancts* are good Signs, when ſeen aloft; but bad Omens, and denote a great Storm, when ſeen on the Decks. It is a ſmall glimmering Light, like a Star, when aloft; but, when on the Deck, it appears like a Glow-worm. It is the Opinion of Mariners, that it is a ſort of Jelly, incorporated by the Wind, Rain, Sea Vapours, and Air; becauſe it is never obſerved, unleſs in ſtormy Weather.

We ſail'd right before the Wind, which was South-weſt, but were obliged to keep continually pumping till the Eighteenth Day; when we made

the Iſle of *Lobos*, about Twelve at Noon. That Night we got ſafe into the Harbour, and anchor'd, at twenty Fathoms Water, in clean Ground, between the two Iſlands: Here we reſolv'd to careen our Ship. Accordingly, obſerving the Time of High-water, we put her into a Cove, in the Southernmoſt Iſland, where we haled her up as far as we could on the Land; and our Carpenter, and all Hands, ſet to work the next Day. This Iſland is barren, and without freſh Water. Here we killed ſeveral Seels, Sea Lions, Boobies, and Penguins; a Sea Fowl about as big as a Duck, whoſe Fleſh is very ordinary Food, but the Eggs exceeding good: Here, alſo, we found a ſmall black Fowl, which makes Holes in the Ground to rooſt in at Night, whoſe Fleſh is very good; and a great many Vultures and Crows. We had careen'd our Ships, and were in Readineſs to ſail on the Twenty-ſixth, and ſailed for the Iſle *Fernandos*, and made the Middle Bay on the Seventh of *Auguſt*, Winter being juſt over there; which continues only for two Months, *viz.* *June* and *July*. We have verbal Accounts here, of ſeveral Men who have been left, or caſt away, and have lived ſome time, and very well, on this Iſland. Here we mended our Sails. There is Plenty of very good Fiſh, of divers Sorts. It is very pleaſant on the Shore, and very healthy; ſo that the Men who had been ill in our Voyage, perfectly recovered their Healths: For the green Pimento-trees diffus'd a very agreeable and refreſhing healthy Smell all over the Iſland. Here we ſpent ſome time in taking Wood on board, and, likewiſe, in laying Water up, which here is very good; we alſo boil'd a conſiderable Number of Sea Lions, of which there are Plenty here: We had, alſo, Plenty of young Seels, which eat very well; only their Livers are unwholſome: And at the South End of the Iſland

we

we found ſome Goats, of which we killed about Thirty, which were excellently good. Here were, alſo, Plenty of Turneps and Watercreſſes, which were of great Service to us in curing the Scurvy; of which we gathered a very large Quantity.

So, having refreſhed ourſelves very well on this Iſland, we reſolved to ſteer for *Cape Verde* in *Chili* on the Twelfth, made the Iſland of *St. Jago*, where we anchored, and ſent our Boat on Shore. Here we bought ſome Hogs, and Black Cattle (for our Voyage round *Cape Horn* to the *Braſils*); as alſo, ſome Corn, and Maize. Here the People, from the ill Uſage they have formerly met with from the *French*, are extremely ſharp, and really diſhoneſt; for if they trade with you, and can't get the Advantage of you which they think you would have of them, they will ſnatch your Goods, and run away with them.

We weighed Anchor on the Twentieth, and ſailed from hence round *Cape Horn* in 51 Degrees 15 Minutes Lat. as our Pilot inform'd me, I being only a Merchant on board, and therefore do not pretend to take a methodical Journal, only as I promiſed to give an Account of the moſt material Paſſages in our Voyage home. Round the Cape the Weather favoured us extremely, and nothing happened, that was material, only that we were chaſed by a Pirate-ſhip for about Twelve Hours, on the Twenty-ninth; but the Night coming on, it favoured us ſo, that we loſt her. On the Fourth of *September* we made *Faulkland*'s Iſland: Here we ſaw a great Number of Porpuſes, which often leap'd out of the Water, of an uncommon Sort. On the Fifth, we had the Misfortune to have one of our Men fall into the Sea, as he was throwing the Lead; and he was drowned before we could give him any Help. We had very briſk Gales at South-weſt. We ſail'd, and

made *Cape St. Antonio*, near the Mouth of the River *De la Plata*, in *Paragua*, on the Twenty-fifth, the Wind South by Weſt; when we ſtood out to Sea, and made the Iſle of *Grande*, on the Coaſt of *Brazil*, on the Twenty-ninth. We got a Pilot, who conducted us into the Watering-cove at the inner Weſtermoſt Point of the Iſland. In ſounding as we went in, we hardly met, in any Place, with leſs than Ten Fathoms Water. The Iſland is about Nine Leagues long, high Land near the Water-ſide: It abounds with Wood, has Monkeys, and other wild Beaſts; Plenty of good Timber, and freſh Water, Oranges, and Lemons. We had pleaſant Weather, but extremely hot. We here received a Letter from our Owners, commanding us Home, and not to ſail for *New England*, as deſigned. Here we got Beef, Mutton, Hogs, Fowls, Sugar, Rum, Oranges, and Lemons (ſo that now we did not want good Punch). During our Voyage from the *Galliapagoes*, I applied myſelf to the Peruſal of my good old Man's Memoirs, which I took very great Delight in; and finding the whole Series of his minor Years attended with ſuch a Number of unaccountable Accidents hardly to be paralleled, I thought proper, as I deſign'd them to be publiſh'd at my Arrival in *England*, to digeſt them in a more regular manner than I found them wrote in his Manuſcript; but neither added nor diminiſhed; nor did I in the leaſt vary from what he himſelf had wrote, as to the Accidents of Life; only I made ſome Amendments which I thought neceſſary: For his Abſence from *England* ſo long as Fifty Years, had occaſioned him, in ſome manner, not to be well acquainted with the Language as it is now ſpoken, and (by his living without any Converſation ſo long a time) had made him, in ſome meaſure, forget his own Mother Tongue. Though I really think, taking that into Con-

Conſideration, that his Account was very polite; yet, had his Life been publiſh'd as in his Memoirs, it would have appear'd very obſolete, and difficult to be read, though ever ſo entertaining. I, accordingly, collected all the Paſſages of his firſt Twenty-eight Years together, and thought proper to make a Book, or Part, by themſelves, that Part of his Life being different from his hermitical Confinement on the Iſland, which at firſt Sight appear'd ſo full of Horror, and nothing but a Proſpect of the moſt miſerable Condition that could befal him. He no ſooner look'd round him, and, depending upon Providence as a Supporter of the Diſtreſs'd, but he found almoſt every-thing neceſſary for human Life on that ſmall Iſland; and he, who then thought of nothing but immediately periſhing in the moſt miſerable Condition, has liv'd, by the Help of Divine Providence, in a ſafe and plentiful manner; and is now ſo inur'd thereunto, that he deſpiſes the populous World, and its Vanities: He alſo conſiders its pompous Glory to be of no more Subſtance than a Shadow; and that there is no Felicity on Earth, unleſs in Solitude.

I likewiſe methodized his Account, during his Reſidence on the Iſland, in the former manner; and made another Book, or Part; which, with this Account of my finding him on the Iſland, and my Conference with him, completes my Deſign: So that it can't be call'd an imperfect Deſcription, but complete, in Three Books. So I return to my Voyage.

In our Paſſage from *Juan Fernandes* we ſaw a very large Bird, which is call'd an *Alcatres:* Theſe Birds ſpread their Wings from Eight to Ten Feet wide. In the *Brazils* is a Serpent call'd *Liboya*, or the *Roebuck Serpent*, the Report of which is incredible (in my Opinion), but affirm'd by ſome of the *Portugueſe*; *viz.* that there are ſome of them Thirty

thirty Feet long, its Body being as big as an Hogſhead, and deſtroys a Roe-buck at one Meal. Here we trafficked for ſeveral Sorts of Drugs. We treated the *Portugueſe* very civilly, who ſupply'd us with all Things neceſſary for our Uſe. During our Stay here, there arriv'd a Brigantine laden with Negroes, for the Gold Mines: Here Four of our Men dy'd, and Three ran away from us, the laſt of which we had juſt Occaſion to be thankful for, rather than ſorry; for *Timothy Anchors* over-heard them diſcourſing, that they deſign'd to mutiny at our next Sailing, but was doubtful whether or no they might get enough on their Side to over-power the Captain, and his Party; and agreeing, among themſelves, that it was a very difficult Matter to become Maſters of the Ship: And, beſides, conſidering the Hazard they ran, in being puniſhed, after ſuch a ſevere manner as they ſhould be, if found out, by any means, before they could accompliſh their Deſign, or if they ſhould fail in their Attempt; made them rather chuſe to deſert the Ship, than continue any longer. Though our Captain was an extraordinary good Man, yet Rogues will be always employing their wicked Thoughts; and neither Clemency, nor good Uſage, can make them perform their Duty in their Stations.

The Tenth of *October*, after having ſet *Antiope*, one of our Negro Women, on Shore, who refuſed to be chriſten'd as *Diana* was, we began to ſail, but kept *Elizabeth* and *Juno* on board; the Captain reſolving that ſhe ſhould live with him as his Servant, and by that means would bring up *Tom*'s Child: We did not meet with any-thing very remarkable; but, after about Twenty-four Hours eaſy Sail, we paſs'd the Tropick, and the next Day ſaw Land. We ſtood from it South South-weſt, and had cloſe cloudy Weather all Night, with Showers of Rain: When Day broke, we ſaw *Aſcenſion* Iſland,

Iſland, at about a League's Diſtance; and about Nine o'Clock we came to an Anchor. The Sea is here very deep. The next Day we weigh'd Anchor, and, ſailing North North-eaſt till the Seventeenth, with a freſh Gale at Weſt South-weſt, we croſſed the Line. The next Day an ugly Accident happen'd; for we brought a young Bear from *Mexico*; and our Men being often uſed to play with her, and teaze her, it proved very fatal to one *Thad Obryan*, an *Iriſh* Boy, of about Sixteen Years of Age, who had been fretting the Creature with a ſmall Rope, which he made a Nooſe to, and ſlipp'd her Hind Leg into it, and ſo worry'd her. Her Blood growing warm, and ſhe being enraged at his hunting her to-and-fro on the Deck, where he happen'd to ſlip down; the Bear immediately ſeiz'd poor *Thady* by the Neck, with ſuch Violence, that, before any body could deliver him from her Paws, the poor Boy's Throat was tore to-pieces: So that he dy'd inſtantly.

We ſail'd but very ſlowly now, meeting with continual Calms, and directed our Courſe for *Cape Verde* Iſlands; but on the Twenty-ſixth we had a heavy Tornado, attended with Lightning, which fell as if the Element had been on fire; but it continu'd only for a ſhort time: Afterwards, the Weather prov'd extremely fair, the Wind being full South. A Sailor, going up to furl the Main Top-gallant, on the Third of *November*, in the Morning, ſaw Land, and ſuppoſed it to be one of *Cape Verde* Iſlands, bearing North-eaſt, diſtant about ſeven Leagues, ſmooth Water, and freſh Gales: About Four o'Clock we bore North North-weſt, and went with an eaſy Sail till Day-light, and made the Iſland of *St. Vincent*; when, about Nine o'Clock, we anchor'd in the Bay, in about Five Fathoms Water, where we rode till the next Day; and then we went to *St. Nicolas*, another, and one of the largeſt of the

Cape

Cape Verde Iſlands. Theſe Iſlands are ſo call'd from *Cape Verde* in *Africa*, and are moſtly inhabited by *Portugueſe*. One of them is call'd *Sall:* It derives its Name from the prodigious Quantity of Salt which is naturally congeal'd in Salt-ponds. There are ſome poor Goats on this Iſland, and ſome Wild Fowls. Here are Flamingoes, a large Fowl, much like an Heron, but bigger, and of a rediſh Colour: They feed together in muddy Ponds, or where there is but little Water. They are hard to ſhoot, being very ſhy.

In *St. Nicolas* we traded with ſome of the *Spaniards* for Ambergriſe; but they were very fraudulent, having counterfeited it much. Here are ſome Vineyards, and Plantations, belonging to the *Portugueſs*; and Wine much like *Madera*, of a pale Colour alſo, and thick. The People are ſwarthy, and the Inhabitants live ſcattering in the Valleys.

While we were at this Iſland, we ſcrubb'd our Ship's Bottom, and dug ſome Wells on the Shore, where we got freſh Water. Here an ugly Accident had like to have happen'd: For one of our Men, going down into the Hold with a Candle, ſet fire to a Bale of Cotton, which, by his Careleſſneſs, had like to have been the Loſs of our Ship: But (Thanks to God) it was diſcover'd, by its Smother, juſt before it began to blaze out; ſo that, by immediate Help, we got it extinguiſhed. Very ſoon after, we hoiſted it upon Deck, for fear any of the Fire ſhould remain, and revive again; and becauſe we would have it in mind, for our Safety.

On the Eighth we went to the Iſle of *Mayo*, another of *Cape Verde* Iſlands, but made no Stay. We ſaw, at South-weſt, the Iſland *del Fogo*, which is remarkable for being a *Vulcano*, or Burning Mountain, out of which iſſue Flames of Fire; but they are only

only diſcerned in the Night, and then are ſeen a great Way at Sea: Yet there are Inhabitants on this Iſland (as I have been inform'd by the *Portugueſe* of the Iſland of *St. Nicolas*) who live at the Foot of the Mountain, near the Sea. There are, alſo, Cocoa-nuts, Plantanes, Goats, and Fowls.

In the Iſland of *St. Aritanio*, another of the *Cape Verde* Iſlands, there is a very large Spider (as I was informed by the ſame *Portugueſe*), which weaves its Web between the Trees; and it is ſo ſtrong, that it is difficult for a Man to get through. Here are, alſo, Wild Aſſes; likewiſe, Salt-pits, where great Quantities of Salt are naturally made by the Sun's Heat; with which they load yearly ſeveral Ships, and are able to ſell much greater Quantities than they do, if they had but Vent for it.

Having diſpatched our Affairs at the *Cape Verde* Iſlands, we weigh'd with the Flood, having a ſmall Gale at South South-weſt: On the Seventeenth it began to blow, and veer'd to the South-weſt by South. That Evening we ſaw Three Sail of Ships at Weſt North-weſt, bearing, as we ſuppoſed, for the *Canary* Iſlands, as well as ourſelves. The Night coming on, which was extremely clear and fine, we paſſed the Tropick about the Break of Day; ſoon after which we obſerv'd a North Bank lying in the Horizon: We then provided for a Storm, which thoſe Clouds denote. The Wind was at North-weſt. We brought the Ship under our Main-ſail and Mizen only, and ballaſted our Mizen; but yet the Wind and Seas were too high for us, and every Wave ſeemingly threatened to overwhelm us; ſo that we beat up and down with only our bare Poles, which we feared would break in upon our Deck, which muſt have founder'd us, in caſe it had ſo happen'd: We alſo lower'd our Main-yard and Fore-yard down a Port-laſt, as I obſerv'd the Sailors call'd it, that

that is, pretty near the Deck; and the Wind blew ſo extremely fierce, that we did not dare to looſe any Head-ſail at all: For, if we had, they certainly would have been blown away. During the Storm, it rain'd exceeding faſt, which continu'd for about Four Hours, when it changed, and was pretty calm; and we began to get every-thing in good Order. The Wind, that Evening, changing to South-weſt, about Six the next Evening we ſaw the Pike of *Teneriff*, at about Nine Leagues Diſtance. We ſaw ſome Flying-fiſh, and a great deal of Sea-thiſtle ſwimming. We ſail'd all Night with a ſmall eaſy Gale, and at Break of Day made the *Canaries*; bearing, at North-weſt by Weſt, about Three Leagues. We crouded all our Sail, and came to an Anchor in the Harbour of *Sancta Cruz*, in the Iſland of *Teneriff*, on the Twenty-firſt, in about Thirty Fathoms Water, black ſlimy Ground, about Half a Mile from the Shore. The Land being, for the moſt part, pretty high, 'tis very bad going aſhore here in Boats; and Ships riding here are often forced to put to Sea, or ſlip their Anchors, by reaſon the Road lies ſo open to the Eaſt. Ships are here ſupply'd with good Water between the Coves, where they generally water.

Sancta Cruz, a ſmall Town fronting the Sea, has Two Forts to ſecure the Road: Here ſome *Engliſh* Merchants reſide. Their Houſes are low, and uniform, cover'd with Pan-tiles. Here are Oranges, Lemons, and other Fruits; alſo, Flowers, and Sallading; and a great Number of pleaſant Gardens. At *Oratavia* the Country is ſo full of Riſings and Fallings, that it is troubleſome to walk up and down in it: Mules and Aſſes are moſt uſed by them. Here grows the right and true *Malmſey* Wine; here are, alſo, *Canary* and *Verdona*, or Green Wine: Likewiſe, a great many Convents. Ships are forced

to

to ſlip their Cables, perhaps three or four times, by reaſon of the Winds, and put to Sea, before they can take in all their Lading. Here are Wheat, Barley, Maize, Beans, Peas, Apples, Pears, Plums, Cherries, Pomgranates, Citrons, Oranges, Lemons, and ſeveral other Fruits, excellently good; alſo, Horſes, Aſſes, Mules, Cows, Goats, Hogs, Deer, and Fowl, both Tame and Wild, in great Plenty. Proviſions are dear on the trading Iſlands, but cheap on the others.

Fero Iſle is very remarkable: It hath no freſh Water, only in the Middle of the Iſland, where there grows a Tree; which being continually cover'd with Clouds, from its Leaves always drops great Quantities of excellent Water. Theſe *Canary* Iſlands are commonly the Rendezvous of the *Spaniſh Weſt-India* Fleet, where they generally receive Orders for unlading their Wealth.

From the Harbour of *Sancta Cruz* we ſail'd, on the Twenty-fifth of *November*, to the *Canary* Iſland: Here the Soil is ſo fertile, that they have two Harveſts in a Year. Its Commodities are, Honey, Wax, Sugar, and the beſt of Wines; of which we took in a ſufficient Quantity of each: Here are, alſo, Dragon-trees, which produce a red Liquor call'd Dragons-blood. Theſe Iſlands are exceeding wholſome, tho' they are inclinable to Heat.

Having taken in the Cargo which we deſign'd from theſe Iſlands, we ſail'd from thence on the Third of *December* for the *Madera* Iſland, with a fair Wind at South South-weſt, and ſaw ſeveral Ships ſailing towards the *Lizard:* The next Day, at Eight in the Morning, we made Land, which was the *Madera*, at about Four Leagues Diſtance, and came to an Anchor: Here are many Fountains and Rivers, which refreſh the Country. It is a very beautiful Iſland, exceeding fertile, and produces excellent Wine, which is very ſtrong. We anchored in the Port,

Port, which reſembles an Halfmoon, not far from the Town. Near this Iſland is another (not ſo large as this, which is about Sixty Leagues in Compaſs), call'd *Porto Sancto*, which affords much the ſame Commodities as *Madera:* Here we took in about Thirty Pipes of *Madera* Wine; and, having accompliſhed our Buſineſs, we left that Iſland on the Tenth, and ſailed for the *Lizard* with a Weſterly Wind. We had not ſail'd above Six Leagues, but it changed to North-eaſt, and the Sky began to be cover'd with ſmall hard Clouds, very thick, one by another, which we imagin'd an approaching Storm: Accordingly, we provided for it, by reeving our Top-ſails, and took in our Sails as faſt as poſſible. The Wind began to blow a very briſk Gale, and ſoon after the Storm began; the Wind ſtill increas'd by Squalls of Rain and Hail, which came very thick and faſt, and the Sea ran very high; ſo that we were obliged to run before the Wind. We ſhipp'd little or no Water, tho' ſome waſh'd into our upper Deck; and with ſome of the Waves a Dolphin was caſt thereon. The Wind blew very hard, but about Eight Hours after, it abated its Fierceneſs, and then the Wind veer'd to the Weſt, and the foul Weather broke up, and we had ſmaller Gales, with ſome Calms, and fair Weather. On the Eighteenth the Wind veer'd to South South-eaſt, which continu'd a briſk Gale till the Twenty-ninth, and we kept right before Wind and Sea, the Wind ſtill increaſing; and we made the *Lizard* on the Twenty-ſeventh, at about Three Leagues, and ſtood in for the Land, and came to Anchor in *King's Road*, *January* 3. 1724-5.

Thus I have given an Account of our Voyage from *Mexico*, as I promiſed, which I hope may not be offenſive to any body; it being my Intention to divert the Readers, rather than diſpleaſe them.

N. B.

N. B. *The Ship belonging to* Briſtol, *I communicated the following Memoirs to a Friend in* London, *in order to be publiſhed; which, if approv'd of by the Public, I ſhall, at my Return, be very well ſatisfied. In the mean time, I have Buſineſs calls me to* Peru *and* Mexico *again; in which Voyage I hope to ſee poor* Phil. *my good old Hermit. And ſo I take my Leave, and end the Firſt Part.*

Briſtol, Nov. 6.
1725.

EDWARD DORRINGTON.

THE *ENGLISH* HERMIT.

BOOK II.

An Account of the Birth and Education of Philip Quarll; *as, alſo, the moſt ſurpriſing Tranſactions of his Life, from his Infancy to his being caſt away.*

Taken from the Memoirs he gave to Mr. Edward Dorrington, *the Perſon who found him on the Iſland.*

PHILIP QUARLL was born in the Pariſh of *St. Giles*, in the Year 1647. His Father, *Thomas Quarll*, formerly a Maſter Builder, having unfortunately ruin'd himſelf in Building, was at laſt reduced to work at the laborious and mean Buſineſs of Brick-making: His poor Wife, alſo, was obliged to lay her Hand to the labouring

labouring Oar; ſo went a charing: Which ſlaviſh and confining Occupation rob'd her of the neceſſary time to attend the Fruit of her conjugal Affection, her beloved *Phil.* ſo that ſhe was obliged (whilſt ſhe and her poor Yoke-fellow were drudging to get him Bread) to commit him to the Care of one kind Neighbour or another, for a ſmall Conſideration, till he could prattle, and go alone; at which time ſhe put him to School to a good old Almſwoman, where he continued till he was Six Years old.

One Day a Neighbour, who formerly had the Care of the Child in his Mother's Abſence, having contracted a particular Love for him, being a very pretty Child; finding him, after School-time, ſitting at his Father's Door; takes him by the Hand, and leads him to his Mother, then at work at an old Lady's Houſe in *Great Ruſſel Street.*

The Houſekeeper, who was naturally fond of Children, ſeeing this pretty Child, takes him up in her Arms, and runs up to her good old Lady, who had juſt ended her cuſtomary private Devotion.

The Child, whom the poor Woman kept very neat and clean, beyond what could be expected out of her ſmall Gettings, was naturally very handſome; being tall for his Age, and well-ſhaped; his Features regular, and well-proportion'd; his Complexion fair; his Hair long, and curling; his Countenance mild, and ſprightly; his Behaviour gentle, and eaſy: All which Qualifications rendered him completely amiable, and made the old Lady conceive an Inclination for him uncommon for a Stranger's Child, eſpecially of ſo mean a Birth.

Thus, having often kiſſed him, ſhe wiſhed he had been her own. But why, ſaid ſhe, can't I do for this lovely Creature, tho' no Kin to me by Birth? Nature, who has endued him with Qualifications ſo

proximal

proximal and ſuitable to my Inclinations, has, by Sympathy, made him related to me. His Mother gave him Birth, which, without Prejudice to her own Life, ſhe could not refuſe; now I'll give him Education, the principal and moſt neceſſary Care by which real Love can be expreſſed to a Child.

So, having given Orders, that a good School might be inquired after, ſhe put him to board to a Maſter, whoſe moſt commendable Character of inſtructing his Scholars, in their Duty to God and Man, as well as in Literature, had procured him a conſiderable Number of Children of the beſt Families. There ſhe intended to have kept him till he was, by Years and Learning, qualified for ſome genteel Trade; intending to leave him, in her Will, Forty Pounds, to ſet him up, when out of his Time.

But now ill Fate begins to ſhew its Averſeneſs to poor *Phil.*'s Happineſs: The worthy Lady dy'd ſuddenly, and was interr'd, a few Days after, to his unſpeakable Prejudice, and threatening Ruin. But watchful Providence, who had decreed him Good, averted the apparent Evil, and only permitted ſome Interceptions to her Purpoſes, the better to raiſe his Eſteem of her ſucceeding Favours, when ſenſible of them.

The Maſter, having conceived a particular Love for the Boy (whoſe uncommon Docility, and extraordinary Aptneſs in Learning, had overtaken the reſt of his Schoolfellows, tho' of a much longer Standing), was very much vex'd at the Thoughts of his going away to his Parents, they being no longer able to continue his Schooling: He was unwilling to part with the Boy, and much diſturbed to loſe Twelve Pounds a Year for a Boarder. His Love for the Child, whom he had, in a manner, adopted for his own, would now-and-then rouſe ſlumbering Charity, whom Self-intereſt too often caſts aſleep: Pity,

Pity, ſaid he, ſuch blooming Wiſdom, and forward Learning, ſhould wither away for want of Cultivation. Thus, having ponder'd awhile, Love and Charity, after a long Struggle with Intereſt, gained the Victory: The old Man concludes to give him his Learning, if his Relations would only find him in Board, and other Neceſſaries.

This being concluded upon by both the Parties, *Phil.* continued going to School, for the Space of Four Years longer; during which time, he made himſelf a complete Maſter of the Grammar, Writing, and Arithmetick; he alſo made a vaſt Improvement in Singing, having all that time been taught by a Maſter, who attended ſome Boarders three times a Week; who, finding an extraordinary Voice, and natural Diſpoſition, in the Boy, took a Fancy to teach him: So that *Phil.* was, in ſome Reſpects, qualified to attend the School, in the Nature of Uſher, had his Age permitted it. But as he was, as yet, too young to keep the Scholars in that Awe which is neceſſary in a School, the Maſter only gave him his Board, till the elder Scholars left off, and he was grown bigger; intending then to allow him Sufficiency to maintain himſelf, as others in that Station. But ill Fate ſtill attends the poor Boy: The good old Man dy'd in leſs than a Twelvemonth, and was ſucceeded by a ſuperannuated Nonconformiſt Miniſter; who, having not ſo proſperous a School as his Predeceſſor, had no Buſineſs for an Aſſiſtant: So *Phil.* was a ſecond time obliged to return to his poor Mother (his Father being dead); who, not being in a Capacity to do for him as his Education and natural Parts really deſerved, propoſed to him to learn ſome Trade, in order to get his Bread honeſtly and creditably, when ſhe ſhould be no more able to help him; having, by her hard working, and frugal living, made ſhift to

lay up Five Pounds, which ſhe dedicated to that Purpoſe.

Poor *Phil.* who had conceived a Notion that there is a Servitude and Hardſhip entailed upon that Station, was very loth to reſolve upon entering into it; but as he was a very diſcreet Boy, not inclined to play, as Children commonly are, and ſeeing that there was a Neceſſity for him to reſolve upon ſomething; to make his Choice the more eaſy, he conſults the Maſter's Nature and Temper, rather than the Goodneſs and Profitableneſs of the Trade: And as there lived in the Neighbourhood a Lockſmith, ever ſince he was born, who, being great with his Father, would often play with him, when a Child, and now-and-then give him Farthings to buy Fruit; he choſe to be bound to him; which was done in about a Month's time.

They both agreed wonderfully well, the Maſter being very kind and good-natur'd, and the Man as diligent and careful: So that thoſe Fears of meeting with Hardſhip being diſperſed, he chearfully work'd on, without thinking the time tedious. But this Happineſs, though ſlight, is but of a ſhort laſting: For the poor Man, having been bound for a Relation, who failed, had all his Effects ſeized upon, and himſelf thrown into Gaol; and poor *Phil.* in a Year's time, was obliged to come to his Mother again.

This Accident was a vaſt Diſappointment to the Boy's learning his Trade, he being obliged to be idle, his unfortunate Maſter begging that he would ſeek after no other; hoping every Day to make up his Affairs, and carry on Buſineſs again: So that the Lad, for want of Employment, would play about the Streets with Neighbours Children.

One Day, as he was playing at Leap-frog with other Boys, there happened to go by one *James Turner*,

Turner, an Houſe-breaker, who, taking notice of his Activity, which much exceeded the reſt, judged he might be of great Uſe to him in the Practice of his Art. The Meanneſs of his Dreſs, which ſpoke him of no conſiderable Family, gave him Room to hope that he might eaſily get him: So, having ſtopt a while, he took the Opportunity, that the Boy, being hot with running, and jumping, went to drink at a Pump hard by. He takes him by the Arm, ſaying, Do you mean to kill yourſelf, Child, to go and drink cold Water now, when you are hot? Come along with me, and I will give thee a Draught of good Ale: You ſhall only go a ſhort Errand for me. Will you, Maſter? the innocent Boy anſwered; I'll go your Errand, if it's not too far: So followed him to an Alehouſe, in a blind Alley, not far from thence, which he commonly uſed. Being come, he calls for a Quart, and bids the Boy take a hearty Pull; which he did, being very dry, and the Liquor as pleaſant: This being done a ſecond time, it began to creep into his Head, not being uſed to ſtrong Drink; and in a little time he fell aſleep upon the Bench on which he ſat.

The Seducer, thinking himſelf ſecure of him, leaves him to take his Nap, ſhutting the Door upon him, and charging the People of the Houſe not to awake him, nor let him go away, when awake, till he returned; ſo went to get ready the Implements neceſſary to ſet his evil Project in Execution; having determined to rob a rich Merchant that Night in which wicked Action he intended to make that harmleſs Boy his chief Inſtrument, by putting him in at an Hole he was to break, and then to open the Door for him, under the Pretence that it was his Uncle, who was ſo ill-natur'd as to lock him out, in not at home at the Shop ſhutting up.

lay up Five Pounds, which ſhe dedicated to that Purpoſe.

Poor *Phil.* who had conceived a Notion that there is a Servitude and Hardſhip entailed upon that Station, was very loth to reſolve upon entering into it; but as he was a very diſcreet Boy, not inclined to play, as Children commonly are, and ſeeing that there was a Neceſſity for him to reſolve upon ſomething; to make his Choice the more eaſy, he conſults the Maſter's Nature and Temper, rather than the Goodneſs and Profitableneſs of the Trade: And as there lived in the Neighbourhood a Lockſmith, ever ſince he was born, who, being great with his Father, would often play with him, when a Child, and now-and-then give him Farthings to buy Fruit; he choſe to be bound to him; which was done in about a Month's time.

They both agreed wonderfully well, the Maſter being very kind and good-natur'd, and the Man as diligent and careful: So that thoſe Fears of meeting with Hardſhip being diſperſed, he chearfully work'd on, without thinking the time tedious. But this Happineſs, though ſlight, is but of a ſhort laſting: For the poor Man, having been bound for a Relation, who failed, had all his Effects ſeized upon, and himſelf thrown into Gaol; and poor *Phil.* in a Year's time, was obliged to come to his Mother again.

This Accident was a vaſt Diſappointment to the Boy's learning his Trade, he being obliged to be idle, his unfortunate Maſter begging that he would ſeek after no other; hoping every Day to make up his Affairs, and carry on Buſineſs again: So that the Lad, for want of Employment, would play about the Streets with Neighbours Children.

One Day, as he was playing at Leap-frog with other Boys, there happened to go by one *James Turner*,

Turner, an Houſe-breaker, who, taking notice of his Activity, which much exceeded the reſt, judged he might be of great Uſe to him in the Practice of his Art. The Meanneſs of his Dreſs, which ſpoke him of no conſiderable Family, gave him Room to hope that he might eaſily get him: So, having ſtopt a while, he took the Opportunity, that the Boy, being hot with running, and jumping, went to drink at a Pump hard by. He takes him by the Arm, ſaying, Do you mean to kill yourſelf, Child, to go and drink cold Water now, when you are hot? Come along with me, and I will give thee a Draught of good Ale: You ſhall only go a ſhort Errand for me. Will you, Maſter? the innocent Boy anſwered; I'll go your Errand, if it's not too far: So followed him to an Alehouſe, in a blind Alley, not far from thence, which he commonly uſed. Being come, he calls for a Quart, and bids the Boy take a hearty Pull; which he did, being very dry, and the Liquor as pleaſant: This being done a ſecond time, it began to creep into his Head, not being uſed to ſtrong Drink; and in a little time he fell aſleep upon the Bench on which he ſat.

The Seducer, thinking himſelf ſecure of him, leaves him to take his Nap, ſhutting the Door upon him, and charging the People of the Houſe not to awake him, nor let him go away, when awake, till he returned; ſo went to get ready the Implements neceſſary to ſet his evil Project in Execution; having determined to rob a rich Merchant that Night, in which wicked Action he intended to make the harmleſs Boy his chief Inſtrument, by putting him in at an Hole he was to break, and then to open the Door for him, under the Pretence that it was his Uncle, who was ſo ill-natur'd as to lock him out, if not at home at the Shop ſhutting up.

Having got the Tools, he returned to the Boy, whom he found juſt awake, and very uneaſy to go home, having ſlept till it was dark, being afraid to anger his Relations by ſtaying out late, contrary to his Cuſtom, being uſed to orderly Hours; and would have gone away, had not *Turner*, whoſe Proj-cts would have been quite unhinged, uſed all the Devices he was Maſter of to perſuade him. Firſt he beſpeaks a Supper of that which the Boy lik'd beſt, who, ſince his being come from the Boarding-School, had been uſed to none but coarſe Meat, his poor Parents Ability affording no better: Then, to divert away the Time he intended to prolong till his Opportunity ſuited, he told him ſeveral Stories, and, moſt particularly, that of his pretended Uncle's Unkindneſs to lock him out of Doors, and of his cunning Invention to get in at his own Time, and unknown to him; but that he was afraid he muſt be forced to lie out that Night, which would be his Death, being not uſed to ſuch Hardſhip. The poor tender-hearted Boy, who could ſcarce forbear crying, whilſt he related this diſmal Story of his Uncle's unkind Uſage, ask'd him what was the matter he could not get in that Night, as well as at other Times? Becauſe, reply'd the ſly Knave, the poor Boy that uſed to let me in is ſick of the Small-Pox, as I have heard ſince you fell aſleep. What! can't you get ſomebody elſe? ſaid ſimple *Phil.* I would do that for you, if I could tell how to get in my own Home; for my Mother goes to Bed betimes, being obliged to get up early. As for that Matter, anſwer'd the ſubtle Serpent, do not trouble yourſelf; I'll provide a Bed for you. Thus, having remov'd both that, and all other Obſtacles the Boy raiſed, he perſuades him to ſtay.

But

But ever-watchful Providence reſcues his inſnar'd Innocence. Some Hours before he was to go about the Execution of that evil Project, *Turner* was apprehended for a great Robbery he committed the Night before in *Limeſtreet*; and the Boy, being in his Company, was alſo carry'd before a Magiſtrate. But the Juſtice underſtanding, by the innocent Boy's Defence, he hardly was yet guilty of any Robbery, having regard to his Youth, and modeſt Countenance, reprimanded him for his Eaſineſs of being drawn into bad Company, and warned him to be more cautious for the future: So diſcharged him, and committed *Turner*; who was hang'd.

That Accident, though very lucky, by preſerving innocent *Phil.* from being made acceſſory to a Robbery which would have put his Life in Jeopardy, at the End prov'd fatal; he having thereby gain'd the Character of belonging to ſome ill Gang: For which Reaſon, nobody car'd to be concern'd with him, which griev'd his poor Mother.

The poor Widow (being left with her unfortunate Son, who ſhe fear'd would take to ſome evil way for Want, which often tempts the moſt innocent-inclin'd) not being able, out of her ſmall Gettings, to maintain him, as when aſſiſted by her late Husband; and ſeeing no Proſpect of his Maſter's coming out of Priſon, and being ſet up again; endeavour'd to get him into ſome Place to wait upon ſome of her Miſtreſſes: But the unlucky Accident of being had before a Juſtice of the Peace, with a notorious Houſe-breaker, fruſtrated her Endeavours; ſo that poor *Phil.* was obliged to continue with his Mother in a very mean Condition, which his honeſt Mother very much feared would induce him to evil Company, of which the Pariſh ſhe liv'd in ſwarm'd: But the good Inſtructions which were given him in his Infancy, before bad Examples could

have made any Impreſſion on his Mind, kept out of his Thoughts all wicked Devices. Thus, ſeeing no Probability of Amendment in the Station he was in, he reſolved upon going to Sea, wanting for that Employment neither Character nor Recommendation, which he was ſenſible would be a hard Matter to get, by reaſon of this moſt fatal Accident.

Thus, having imparted his Deſign to his loving Mother, who, with much Reluctance, acquieſced in his going from her, and leaving his native Country, where ſhe once had Hopes to ſee him well ſettled; ſhe, with weeping Eyes, implores the Almighty to direct and receive him into his Protection: And as ſhe was acquainted with no one that could direct and adviſe him in that Matter, ſhe bids him go to *St. Catharine*'s; There, ſaid ſhe, you may chance to hear of ſome Captain or Maſter of a Ship, bound for ſome ſhort Voyage, who, perhaps, may want a Cabin-boy; which is, my dear Child, all that your Age and Strength qualifies you for: In a few Years, with the Help of God, you may find ſome advantageous Opportunity to advance yourſelf by your Learning. So, having given him Sixpence to bear his Charges, with a tender Kiſs, ſhe goes to her wonted Occupation, and he ſtrait to *St. Catharine*'s, where Providence had prepared a Maſter for him; he being no ſooner come thither, than a Captain of a Ship, bound for the *Eaſt Indies*, taking a particular Fancy to him, aſked him whether he would go to Sea; and that, if he was ſo diſpoſed, he would take him to look after his Cabin, and provide very well for him.

The gentle manner in which he ſpoke to the Boy, and his mild Countenance, made a vaſt Progreſs in his Affection: So, having joyfully accepted his Offer, he deſires that he may run Home, and acquaint his Mother of it. The Captain, having taken his Name,

Name, and Place of Abode, gave him Half a Crown to ſpend with his Mother, and then to come to him, at the Sign of the *Black Boy* near the *Iron Gate*; that he need bring no Cloaths with him; for he would provide every-thing neceſſary for the Voyage.

The overjoy'd Boy, having told his Mother of his extraordinary Succeſs, gives her the Money, being in great Haſte to return to his new Maſter: So, having embraced his tender Mother, and ſhe her dear Son, weeping over one another for ſome time, he leaves her at her Work.

The good Woman, tho' ſhe had all the Reaſon in the World to be eaſy in her Mind, that the Boy was out of thoſe Temptations which great Want, and bad Company, might lead him into, could not be reconciled at his going from her: But, ſeeing no Remedy, ſhe ſends Crouds of Prayers after him, accompanied with Showers of Tears, recommending him to the Care of Heaven, to whom ſhe daily made Addreſſes for his Proſperity.

Phil. who from his Infancy had been uſed to be from his Mother, was leſs diſturbed at his leaving her, nothing but his new-intended Voyage running in his Mind; ſo haſtened to the Rendezvous his new Maſter had appointed him; who, not expecting that he would return, was ſo glad to ſee him, that he went, that Moment, and bought him both Cloaths and Linen fit for the Sea; ſo equipp'd him anew Cap-à-pé; then took him Home, and in a few Days after ſet ſail for a Three Years Voyage.

During their ſailing, *Phil.* whoſe agreeable Aſpect and Temper had gained him all the Ship's Crew's Love, being often with the Man at the Helm, ſoon learn'd the Compaſs; and, by the Inſtructions every-body on board ſtrove to give him, in a little time he was qualified for a Sailor; which

his Maſter being made ſenſible of, whom he had often diverted with his Singing during that Voyage, allowed him Sailors Pay, the following Voyage, which was ſoon after; for in leſs than three Weeks time the Ship was new-laden, and ſet out again for the ſame Place, and was gone as long as before; at the End whereof it return'd home richly laden, and in a ſhorter time than was common: Which, being put in the News, as uſual, prompted a certain Number of *Drury-Lane* Nymphs to go down to the Place where they heard the Ship was arrived; ſuppoſing that the luſty Sailors, having a long time been confin'd to ſalt Meat, would, at their Arrival, being fluſh of Money, purchaſe a Bit of freſh at any rate.

Being come to *Graveſend*, where the Ship lay, they found, according to Cuſtom, the jolly Crew in an Alehouſe, ſpending, like Aſſes, what they had earned like Horſes, even before they had received it.

At the Ladies coming, the elevated Sailors, who had been ſailing on ſalt Water for the Space of three Years, and ſince ſet their Brains floating in ſtrong Drink, for ſix Hours, having loſt the Rudder of their Reaſon, ran headlong upon thoſe Quick-ſands, where moſt of them loſt all they had, before they could get off.

The ingenious Ladies, who had more Wit than Honeſty, improved the Abſence of their Underſtanding; and, being very expert in the Art of Fathoming, they fell to examining the Depth of thoſe ſhallow-brain'd Fellows Pockets; which finding very low, they were much diſheartened from going on, for fear of running aground: But, underſtanding that their Ship had not yet been clear'd, they caſt their Anchor there, waiting for a freſh Gale.

Meantime

Meantime the merry Sailors, fearing no Storm, gave themſelves up to Sport; and, for better Diverſion, every Man takes a Playfellow, and goes aſide, leaving baſhful *Phil.* behind; who, being a Stranger to the Game they were going to play at, did not dare to put in for a Partner: But croſs Fate ſtill attending him, a Snare is laid in which he muſt fall.

Every Man, but modeſt *Quarll*, being gone away with a Wench; one, being ſupernumerary, ſtayed behind. The crafty Creature, who, from her firſt coming in, had fix'd on the innocent young Man for her Quarry, kept at ſome Diſtance from her Comrades; waiting their Abſence, to work her Deſign.

Unthinking *Phil.* having no Suſpicion of her cunning Devices, lying intirely unguarded againſt her firſt Attacks, ſtood no long Siege, but capitulated at the firſt Summons. 'Tis true, ſhe was provided with ſuch Artillery, as no Fortifications againſt Love could withſtand; but would force the moſt ſtubborn to ſurrender, or at leaſt to parly, which is a Forerunner thereof.

Thus, having fix'd her Baſiliſk's Eyes upon him, as being the firſt Battering-piece the Sex plants, when they purpoſe a Breach in a Man's Heart; ſhe charges him with a Volley of engaging Words, whilſt her Looks and Carriage offer him ſuch prevailing Terms, as no Man of any Feeling can refuſe: Therefore, being an exquiſite Miſtreſs of her Art, ſhe ſoon obtains her Ends.

Poor *Quarll*, whoſe Heart, till then, had never been beſieged, finding the Invader more tempting than dreadful, ſhe having a very agreeable Shape, charming Complexion, and moſt engaging Features, ſurrenders up at Diſcretion, and ſubmits even to bear the Yoke of Matrimony; which, in leſs

than an Hour, is laid upon him; the Chaplain of a Man of War, who lodged in the Houſe, happening to come in at that critical Minute.

By that time the abſent revelling Crew were cloy'd with their Miſtreſſes, and had diſmiſſed them with rough Uſage, and ill Language, of which they generally are fluſh, when Money is ſcant.

The diſappointed Wretches, ſeeing no Redreſs for their Treatment lately received, which they well knew proceeded from want of Money, concluded upon ſtaying in that Place till their Ship was clear'd; by which time, their Appetite being ſharpen'd again, and they fluſh of Money, and hoping they would alſo be better Chaps; they took a Garret in a little Strong-water-ſhop, where they made ſhift to kennel together, and live upon ſhort Commons.

Our new-married Couple, whoſe Money was but ſcanty, were alſo obliged to put up with indifferent Quarters; but the Hopes of receiving the poor Huſband's Pay ſoon, and, withal, the Thoughts of being protected from a Gaol, which ſhe was in Danger of, before marry'd, being the principal Advantage ſhe propoſed to herſelf by having a Huſband; it made her now eaſy: But ſhe, and all the reſt of her Companions, were diſappointed. The Ship being unladen, the Cargo proved damaged, by the Leaking of the Veſſel, which is commonly made good by the Sailors: So that, inſtead of Three Years Wages being due, the poor Men ſtood indebted to the Merchants.

That Diſappointment put the unfortunate Seamen, and eſpecially the Ladies, into a ſad Conſternation; the former being obliged to go another Voyage with empty Pockets, and the latter to ſeek for Cullies to ſupport their Extravagance, and to pay for new Lodgings.

Phil.

Phil. who, during the Voyage, had ſaved a little Money, which his Maſter gave him at ſundry times, being diſguſted at the Sea, by the late Accident, reſolves to ſeek his better Fortune in another manner.

His crafty Wife, who was, by her Marriage, ſcreen'd from her Creditors, depending upon her former Occupation, indulged him in that Reſolution; ſo they ſet out with that Little he had, and arriv'd pretty bare. Finding no Friends in *London*, his Maſter being dead whilſt he was at Sea, he reſolves to liſt in the Foot-Guards for Bread, having no other Dependence; ſo conſults with his Spouſe about a Lodging, till he had Quarters appointed for him. She, indeed, was beſt acquainted with the Town, and knew of ſeveral that would ſuit both their Stock and Station; but durſt go to none, having bilk'd moſt of them, and left a Score with the reſt. But Lodging muſt be had before Night; and the Day was far ſpent; which ſet her a thinking, Neceſſity being the Mother of Invention: And ſhe, as is peculiar to Women of her Employment, being well acquainted with it, was no Stranger to Shifts; and preſently finds one.

Having pondered for a ſhort time, ſhe concludes upon going to her laſt Lodging; where, though ſhe was conſiderably in Debt, ſhe queſtioned not but ſhe ſhould ſtill find a kind Reception; and that her Landlady, where ſhe had been about a Fortnight, having given over her Debt, would, at her coming, ſlacken the ill Opinion ſhe had conceived of her, and afford her kind Uſage: So, having fix'd a Rendezvous for her Huſband, ſhe haſtens there; where ſhe found, as was expected, the old Woman as overjoy'd as ſurpris'd to ſee her; and much more, when ſhe underſtood ſhe was marry'd to a Sailor, lately arriv'd from a Three Years Voyage; who, in a ſhort

time, would be clear'd, and that then ſhe would rub off her Score. The old Woman, thinking herſelf ſecure of her Debt, and ſure of a good Cuſtomer, bids her kindly welcome; and that ſhe hoped ſhe would take no other Lodging, but in her Houſe: That ſhe would make every-thing as eaſy and convenient as ſhe ſhould deſire; being as welcome to ſcore, as with ready Money.

The ſubtle Woman, having gained her Ends, goes and fetches her Husband, whom the over-reach'd old Woman receives moſt kindly, expreſſing her Love by a Quarter n of All-fours, the chief Commodity of her Houſe: That, being drank, was ſucceeded by a ſecond, at the new Tenants Coſt; which, being brought with a chearful Welcome to as many as they pleaſed, encouraged the coming-in of half a Dozen more: Theſe warm'd the Company, and particularly the Landlady; who, having greeted *Quarll* for his moſt happy Marriage, over and over, fell upon praiſing his Wife, whom ſhe had known for a long time; giving her all the Encomiums that Virtue itſelf could deſerve.

In this manner they lived about a Fortnight, ſtill upon Score; which increaſing very faſt, and no Proſpect of Money, it obliged the Landlady to put them in mind; often asking when they expected the Ship to be clear'd. *Quarll*, who diſcern'd, by the Cloud which appear'd over her Brow, a threatening Storm, begins to think of an Harbour, and forthwith goes and liſts himſelf in the Foot-Guards.

In that mean Station, which often is the laſt Spite of a ſurly Fate, a Continuation of Misfortunes attends him: The Company, where he liſted in, is full of Mercers and Shopkeepers, who for a Protection took on in the Service, and quitted their Pay to their covetous Colonel, to be exempted from Duty, which made it fall heavy on the effective Men;

Men: But kind Providence, who ever limited the Evil that attended him by Fortune, ordered this its vexatious Influence to turn to his Advantage.

One Day that he mounted Guard out of his Turn, being upon Duty at the Park-gate next to *Chelſea*, about Ten at Night, the Place being clear of People, he fell a ſinging to divert melancholy Thoughts, which Solitude is apt to indulge: At that time happened to come by a Colonel of the ſame Regiment, who, being merrily diſpoſed, ſtopped for ſeveral Minutes to hear him ſing: *Quarll*, having made an End of his Song, fell a whiſtling the Tune; at which, the Colonel came to him, ſaying, How can you profane ſuch a fine Tune with whiſtling, when you can ſing it ſo well? Pray let me hear you do it once more; and grace it with that good Voice Nature has given you. *Quarll*, having made ſome few modeſt Excuſes, yields to his perſiſting Solicitation, and ſings the ſame Song over again, and with more Care than before; which ſo pleaſed the Gentleman, that he ſtood half an Hour with him, asking him Queſtions: And, being by him inform'd whoſe Company he belong'd to, having his Conſent to be exchang'd, he gives him Five Shillings to drink his Health; and charges him to come to him, at the *Mitre* Tavern at *Charing-Croſs*, the next Day, at Eight of the Clock in the Evening, and ask for Colonel *Bonguard:* So went away.

Quarll, being off Duty, the next Day went to the Place, at the Time appointed; where he finds the Colonel, in Company with half a Score more Gentlemen, who received him with more Civility and Complaiſance than is commonly paid to Men of his Coat: So, having deſir'd him to ſit down amongſt them, and the Glaſs gone round once or twice, the Colonel having praiſed his Singing to the Company,

Company, he was deſir'd to compliment them with a Song; if he pleaſed, with that he ſung to the Colonel the Night before. *Quarll*, having modeſtly told the Gentlemen, he wiſh'd that his Skill and Voice deſerv'd the Honour of their hearing, and that he would do the beſt he could, having, at their Requeſt, drank another Glaſs, he ſung the Song they deſir'd, to their great Satisfaction and Applauſe.

After a ſhort Space of Time was ſpent in the Praiſe of Singing, and a Talk of what engaging an Accompliſhment it is, in either Man or Woman; ſome of the Company, holding that the Charms of Muſick are no-wiſe inferior to the Power of Love; it occaſioned a very agreeable Debate; there being in the Company a Gentleman unfortunately under that Circumſtance, who would give Love the Supremacy over all that can affect our Minds; ſeeing it ſtrips a Man of the Benefits of his own Senſes, of the Strength of his Reaſon, and Soundneſs of Judgment. No Object is fair, but that whoſe Idea hath impreſs'd the Mind; no Harmony heard but in the beloved Voice, or that which ſounds its Praiſe; Dainties have no Savour in the Abſence of that which everything reliſhes; the faireſt Days are but dull, if not enliven'd by the Light of the Charmer's Preſence.

Thus he ran on, till the Company, perceiving he was beginning to be uneaſy, deſired *Quarll* to ſing the Gentleman a Love-Song, who ſpoke ſo much in its Praiſe; which he did, and pleaſed the Lover ſo exceedingly, that he made him a Preſent of Half a Guinea. The Gentleman, who was altogether for Muſick, having aſk'd *Quarll* whether he had any-thing in the Praiſe of it, having alſo his Requeſt anſwer'd; made the reſt of the Company

crave

crave a Song in the Commendation of what ſuited their Inclinations; ſome being for a Bottle, others for Roving, and others for a Country Life.

Quarll, being provided with ſuch Songs, entertain'd them to their Deſires, till Supper was brought up; which being over, the Company, who had been ſo well diverted with *Quarll*'s Singing, conſulted together to do him Service: And, as he was well qualified to teach, they propoſed to recommend him Scholars. A Gentleman in Company having a Siſter who intended to learn, he writes a Letter to her, deſiring ſhe would make uſe of no other Maſter; which Letter he was to carry the next Morning: And as his Regimental Cloaths might leſſen her Opinion of his Merit, he bids him, before he goes, to call at his Lodging, and he would preſent him with a Suit of Cloaths, which he wore but Part of laſt Summer, and therefore little the worſe for wearing. And, as he wanted but an Hat to be completely dreſſed (having an extraordinary handſome Head of Hair), another Gentleman bids him call on him for one; ſo that he had all he wanted to ſet him out.

The Gentlemen having given him Directions where to go for the Things, and the Colonel his Promiſe to get him diſcharged out of the Company he did belong to; at leaſt, to have him exchanged into his own; they every one gave him their Crown apiece: So they departed, bidding him not fail coming thither again that Day Sevennight.

This unexpected, but lucky Adventure, like a ſudden Surprize, unframed his Reaſon, and makes poor *Quarll* overlook the only Obſtacle that could obſtruct his blooming Happineſs. Thus tranſported with ſeeing himſelf Maſter of more Money than ever he was worth before, and in a fair Proſpect of advancing himſelf; he haſtens Home, and in his Guard-

Guard-Cloaths, in which he ought not to be ſeen there; being a Dreſs obnoxious to moſt, and more eſpecially to Creditors.

His Landlady, who, till then, had been made to expect her Money, thinking he only waited the Ship's being diſcharged, to go another Voyage; ſeeing him in that Hope-killing Dreſs, gave a Shriek, as if ſhe had ſeen the Devil: Slanders and Abuſes, ſtriving for Utterance, croud in her foaming Mouth; and, like a rapid Torrent, which, running from a large Extent into a narrow Chanel, ſwells, and overflows its Banks; ſo her Paſſion, finding her Mouth too ſmall a Paſſage, breaks out through her Eyes: Thus, having ſhriek'd and roar'd awhile, which occaſion'd all her Lodgers to come down, ſhe charges poor aſtoniſh'd *Quarll* with Shoals of Abuſes, in the vileſt and moſt inſulting Terms the moſt inveterate Malice can expreſs.

Thus having exhauſted her Stock of Slanders, her Tongue having uttered all the Evil ſhe could, ſhe ſet her miſchievous Hands to work upon his Wife; who, being come to ſee the Occaſion of her ſhrieking, ſtood like one bereft of her Senſes: So, having torn her Head-cloaths off her Head, with Words ſuitable to the barbarous Deeds, ſhe thruſts them both out of Doors; which, tho' the rudeſt Action that could denote the Unmercifulneſs of her intended Revenge, was to them, at that time, the kindeſt Act ſhe could perform.

That unexpected Treatment was no ſmall Check to *Quarll*'s chearful Diſpoſition; but, having conſidered, that one time or other he muſt have ſtood the Shock, he rejoices that it is over; and, being free from the Care of getting her paid, he has at that time nothing to think of but to find another Lodging; which being then too late to go about,

he

he concludes to wait for Morning at a certain Cellar at *Charing-Croſs*, which is open all Night. Going along, ſhe mildly blamed him for his unadviſed coming in that Dreſs, which, he might imagine, could produce no better Effect. To which he anſwered, He never could have wiſhed for better: For, by her turning him out of Doors, ſhe had paid herſelf; which he would have done, had he ſtay'd: But now he was come away, being better provided, and in a better Way, he would have better Lodging; ſo told her of the Adventure, which much rejoiced her; and from that time made her reſolve to forſake her former Way of Living, which Misfortunes only drove her to, being not led by evil Inclination, as many are. The Morning being come, whilſt ſhe went to ſeek for Lodging, he went for the Cloaths he was promiſed the Evening before, which fitted him, as if made on Purpoſe, and made him appear as one of the genteel Employment he was recommended for. Being new-ſhav'd, and powder'd, he went with the Letter, according to Order; and was receiv'd ſuitably to the Recommendation given him. The Lady, being but juſt up, made him drink Chocolate with her; then, having required a Song, ſhe agrees with him for a Guinea a Month, the uſual Rate, and gives him a Guinea at Entrance, as 'tis common; ſo began that very Morning, promiſing to recommend him to a Lady who had Two Daughters; which ſhe accordingly did, and ſent him thither the next time he came.

This fair Proſpect of an handſome and genteel Living, which he always was deſirous of, made him forget his paſt Misfortunes: Thus joyfully he returns to the Cellar, where he had ſpent the Night before, and where he had appointed to meet his Wife, after ſhe had fix'd upon a Lodging; who accordingly

accordingly came in leſs than a Quarter of an Hour, hoping ſhe had pleaſed her Husband, which ſhe reſolved for the future to endeavour. She ſat down, expecting his coming, not knowing he had already waited hers; his Change of Dreſs concealing him from her, not expecting to ſee him in ſo different a Garb from that which ſhe left him in: Which he perceiving, comes up to her, and takes her by the Hand, going to ask her the Succeſs of her Walk; but ſhe, putting it out of his Power, in an angry manner bidding him go about his Buſineſs, having none with her, prevented his ſpeaking. His Silence, which ſhe took to proceed from Baſhfulneſs, occaſioned her looking him in the Face; in which diſcovering her dear Husband's Features, to whoſe natural Handſomeneſs his genteel Cloaths were no ſmall Addition, ſhe was ſeiz'd with ſuch a Surprize, that it ſtruck her ſpeechleſs for ſome Minutes.

Quarll, diſcerning her Diſorder by the fading of her freſh Complexion, was as much ſurpris'd as ſhe. Thus trembling, he takes her in his Arms: My Dear, ſaid he, what's the Matter? Are you not well? Having recover'd her Speech, ſhe embraced him, ſaying, How can I be ill, when my dear Heart and Soul appears ſo well?

Theſe kind Words, and the Return of that Fluſh which firſt kindled Love's Fire in his Heart, inflames it afreſh; hardly can he govern his new-rais'd Paſſion: Thus, giving her a Kiſs, My Love, ſays he, have you got me a Lodging? Yes, my Dear, replies the loving Wife; you ſhall ever dwell in my Heart. But I want to lie in your Arms, anſwers he; that can't be done here. Well, then, ſaid ſhe, I have provided a fit Place. So, having each of them taken a Dram, they went away.

Sally,

Sally, who till then was a Stranger to real Love, now feels its true Smart; and tho' ſhe has for ſome time enjoy'd the Fruition, the only Bliſs Pains-taking Lovers aſpire at for the Reward of all their Toils and Labours, and the happy Shore Love's Compaſs points at; yet ſhe ſeems uneaſy, as expecting ſomething more: She cavils with Time for flying too faſt. Whole Days and Nights are too ſhort for her to behold her Dear. She continually bears his Image in her Heart, and wiſhes ſhe could for ever have him in her Arms; which from that time ſhe conſecrates to chaſte Embraces; devoting herſelf wholly to the diligent and aſſiduous Practice of the neceſſary Qualifications in a Wife, to render an Husband truly happy: The Execution of which wiſe and virtuous Reſolutions gained her the tendereſt and moſt ſincere Love and Affection a really fond Husband can ſhew or expreſs to a darling Wife.

They lived in that truly happy State about Half a Year; at the End of which, cruel Fate, envious of his uncommon Happineſs, moſt barbarouſly robs him of it, almoſt as ſoon as he had ſavoured its incomparable and matchleſs Sweets.

One Summer Morning, loving and truly-obſerving *Sally*, knowing her Husband delighted in Flowers and Greens, went to *Covent-Garden*, in order to buy ſome to garniſh her Windows and Chimney, being the only Things wanting to complete the Neatneſs of her Lodging, which ſhe kept in the greateſt Order. As ſhe was going, ſhe moſt unfortunately met with the perjured Knight, who deceived her out of her Virtue, and with whom ſhe had lived a conſiderable Time, in Expectation of his fulfilling the Promiſe he made her, when ſhe put him in Poſſeſſion of her Maiden-Treaſure; who, being glutted with his ſacrilegious Theft, moſt baſely and ungratefully

ungratefully left her deſtitute. Fain would ſhe have ſhunn'd the fatal Principle and Origin of her paſt Misfortunes, and helliſh Motive of her late evil Life, which ſhe mortally abhorred, and zealouſly renounced: But inexorable Fate has decreed her Ruin; ſhe can no-wiſe avoid him; he was too near before ſhe perceived him, and had hold of her Hand ere ſhe could ſhift it out of his Way.

Being thus ſuddenly ſtopp'd by him, ſhe would have embraced the ſevereſt Death, to avoid the vile Seducer, by whom her Innocence was firſt betray'd. The irreconcilable Antipathy ſhe had conceived for the mortal Enemy of her newly-retriev'd Virtue, being ſtartled at his terrifying Appearance, ſet her whole Faculty in an Uproar, and ſcares away her Senſes; not ſo much as a Word left her to expreſs her Trouble.

The amorous Knight, whoſe late Love for the fair *Sally* (whoſe regular Living had repaired thoſe Charms her former lewd Life had very much damaged) was reviv'd, and grown more paſſionate than ever, flattering his Hopes with the Thoughts, that her preſent Diſorder proceeded from Joy and Surprize, took the Opportunity of an empty Hackney-Coach which was going by, to bring her to his Lodgings: So, having ſtopp'd it, he puts in the poor diſpirited Woman, altogether inſenſible of what was done, or deſigned; but having, with the ſhaking of the Coach, recovered a little Spirit, and finding herſelf ſo much in his Power, as aimed at her total Ruin, ſhe gave a loud Shriek, which occaſion'd the Coach to be ſtopp'd by ſome People who were going by; but his proteſting he had no other Deſign but to take her to a Friend's Houſe till ſhe was intirely recovered, repreſenting alſo the Danger of expoſing herſelf by oppoſing his kind Intention, being then near a Street where he and ſhe had

had lived together a conſiderable time, in ſome meaſure pacified her: So, having put his Head out of the Coach, he tells the People who ſtood by, that his Wife, who had been lately overſet, was afraid of the like Accident, which made her ſcream; ſo bid the Coachman drive on; during which time he entertains her with all the Marks of a paſſionate Love, ſwearing over-and-over he was her Slave for ever; and that now kind Fortune once more brought 'em together, none but Death ſhould ſever him from the Perſon he lov'd ſo dear; and that he would expire in thoſe ſoft Arms which often gave him Life.

Theſe fond Expreſſions, which ſhe formerly had given Credit to, are now Upbraidings and Reproaches for her too eaſy Credulity, and only increaſed her Hatred for the Deluder; which, at that time, ſhe thought proper to conceal: Thus, reſtraining her Paſſion, ſhe aſſumes a feign'd Calmneſs, and mildly returns him Thanks for his Love, which ſhe cannot indulge, being married. Married! ſaid he, and I living! Was you not mine? I was, indeed, reply'd ſhe, bluſhing with Anger and Shame. But what was I! I tremble to think on't. Why, ſaid he, my Love and Heart's Delight, and ſhall be, whilſt Breath keeps it in Motion. Oh! falſe Man, ſaid ſhe, weeping moſt bitterly, repeat not thoſe deluding Words, which betray'd my Virtue. Come, ſaid he, ceaſe that Flood which overflows my Soul with the bittereſt of Sorrows, and reprieve the moſt penitent of Men from the cruelleſt of Deaths: My ſubmiſſive Obſervance of your Inclinations ſhall henceforth atone for all paſt given Diſpleaſures. Mean you, ſaid ſhe, as you ſpeak? By all that's ſacred I do, reply'd he. Then, ſaid *Sally* joyful, ſet me down here, and I'll forgive what's paſt. No, my Dear, this being a Requeſt I cannot in Honour grant, I may, without Breach

of

of Promiſe refuſe: I muſt ſee you quite re-eſtabliſh'd firſt.

By this time the Coach was arrived to the directed Place, which proved to be an Houſe where ſhe had laſt lived with the Knight; which being open, and the Landlady at the Door, obliged her to go in without Reſiſtance; fearing it would be of no Uſe, but rather prejudicial to her Deſign: So ſhe quietly went in, hoping ſhe ſhould have a better Opportunity to get away, after ſhe had made the Landlady underſtand that ſhe was married. But the ſordid Wretch, hoping the Knight would lodge there again, who proved an extraordinary beneficial Lodger before, went out of the Room, and left her to his Pleaſure.

Poor *Sally* ſeeing herſelf at the Point of being a ſecond time undone, there being no one to aſſiſt her within, nor Hopes of any Help from abroad, the Room ſhe was in being backwards, next to large Gardens, and diſtant from the Houſe, and therefore out of hearing; gives herſelf up to Deſpair, ſeeking the Opportunity of laying hold of his Sword, on which ſhe was reſolved to fall, rather than yield to his adulterous Deſires. Thus, whilſt the Knight was labouring to expreſs the Height of his Love, by the moſt endearing Terms, and prevailing Words, the moſt paſſionate Lover could invent; ſhe, of a ſudden, ſnatch'd the Sword from his Side, and turn'd the Point thereof towards her Breaſt, in order to execute her barbarous, though virtuous Reſolution. What do you mean? ſaid he, laying hold of her Arm. To get myſelf at Liberty, ſaid ſhe, which you baſely refuſe: So falls into a violent Fit, which laſted ſome Minutes; which was no ſooner over, but it was ſucceeded by another, and ſo on, for the Space of Three Hours; at the End of which time ſhe was ſo faint and weak, that her Life was deſpair'd of,

of, and ſo continu'd all Day; which made the Knight repent that he had forced her to ſtay, ſo much againſt her Will; heartily wiſhing that he knew where ſhe lived, that he might ſend her home; which ſhe not being well enough to tell, the Landlady, by the Knight's Orders, got the beſt Room of the Houſe fitted up for her: And the Bed being warm'd, ſhe was carefully laid in it, and a Doctor ſent for; who, having felt her moſt diſorder'd Pulſe, ſaid, her Indiſpoſition proceeded from Paſſion and Grief; and order'd that ſhe ſhould be let Blood, which would give her oppreſs'd Spirits a preſent Relief. The Phyſician was no ſooner gone, but the Surgeon was ſent for, to perform the Doctor's Orders; which gave her immediate Eaſe, and, in a little time, caus'd her to ſleep, which laſted all the Night.

This great and ſudden Amendment much rejoiced the moſt afflicted Knight, who made a Vow not to leave her till ſhe was reſtored to her wonted Health; ſitting up by her all Night.

The next Morning *Sally*, whoſe good Night's Reſt had, in a great meaſure, recover'd both Strength and Reaſon, finding herſelf in a ſtrange Bed, and from her Husband, was again ſeiz'd with Surprize, which did much threaten a Relapſe. Heavens! ſaid ſhe, by what Inchantment am I here! What Fiends could raviſh me out of my dear Spouſe's Arms? Then, ſeeing the Knight ſtand by the Bed-ſide, ſhe gives a loud Shriek: Oh! vile Raviſher! ſaid ſhe, is it then by another of your helliſh Stratagems that I am again betray'd into your Power? at which ſhe fell into a violent Fit of Crying. No, moſt virtuous Woman, reply'd the Knight, falling on his Knees; it is by Accident, of which I own myſelf to be the moſt miſerable Occaſion, for which I heartily aſk both Heaven and you Pardon. Then he relates the whole Matter, which the late

Illneſs her exceſſive Grief and Paſſion brought upon her, had made her forget.

That woful Relation did but add to her Trouble, by heightening her Grief. Oh! ſaid ſhe, with a freſh Shower of Tears, how can I now look my dear Husband in the Face, when my very Juſtification turns to my Shame?

The Knight, who was in as great a Conſternation as ſhe could be in, takes her Hand, which lay motionleſs out of the Bed, and, bathing it with Tears, begs her to forbear terrifying his moſt penitent Soul; promiſing to rectify all paſt Wrongs: You remember, my Life, ſaid he, the Vows I made when firſt you gave yourſelf to me: I renew them now, and would fulfil them, but that it would expoſe you to the Rigour of the Law: Therefore I'll only, for the preſent, ſettle Five hundred Pounds a Year upon you for your Life, till, by your Husband's Death, I am impowered to make you lawful Miſtreſs of all my Eſtate. Pray compoſe yourſelf, and ſedately conſider on't; and, when 'tis come to a Concluſion, I'll attend for your Anſwer: So withdrew, for a while.

This generous Offer, expreſſing the Sincerity of his Love for whom ſhe had formerly more than a common Eſteem, in a great meaſure appeaſed her Paſſion; the offered Atonement diſarms her Revenge; ſhe now pleads for him ſhe had condemn'd, and blames herſelf for the Crime ſhe had charged him with. How could I, ſaid ſhe, think my Virtue ſafe in his Hands, on whom Love has ſuch an Aſcendant (which is itſelf guilty of as many Faults as it covers)? If he went away with my Heart, it was but a Breach of Truſt: Beſides, his Abſence was no Flight, it being occaſioned by Buſineſs.

Having

Having made theſe reconcilable Reflections, and being at the Point of accepting his Offer, Conſcience ſtarts, and oppoſes her Reſolution: Her Husband ſtands in the Way, rigg'd in all thoſe engaging Qualifications which had won her Affection. This, coming into her Mind, in a manner ſcares away her Reaſon; ſhe can't help loving both: Her Love for the Knight pleads Seniority, and that for her Husband Juſtice. The firſt is attended with Intereſt, the laſt is prompted by Virtue. The Debate is great, and both their Arguments ſtrong: Reaſon is call'd to decide the Matter, which, having (as 'tis her Cuſtom) ſedately weigh'd the Cauſe, examin'd both Accidents and Incidents, at laſt ſeems inclinable to favour the Love for the Knight; but Juſtice, who is always in the right, will not reſign it: Peace and Content, the only Motives worth contending for, muſt be conſulted. They, being alſo cautious of giving a raſh Verdict, examined on which Side they were in moſt Safety; and, finding themſelves moſt ſcreen'd from Upbraidings and Reproaches (their mortal Enemies) for the Knight, gave it of his Side. So Juſtice, who ſeldom gets its Due, is forced to drop the Cauſe, and tacitly withdraw.

The Knight's Offer being the ſofteſt Choice for an eaſy and quiet Life, which ſhe could not reaſonably expect with her Husband, who doubtleſs would, from the late Accident, conceive an ill Opinion of her Virtue (which, altho' at that Time blameleſs, ſhe could not with Modeſty vindicate); having ſent for the Knight, ſhe ſpeaks to him after this Manner:

I have had ſo much Reaſon to repent my being too credulous, by the many Vexations it has occaſioned me now, that ſhould I, upon the bare repeating of broken Promiſes, expoſe myſelf to the ſame, you yourſelf could not but blame me. In-

deed, dear *Sally*, ſaid the Knight, interrupting her, I own you have ſufficient Cauſe to queſtion my Sincerity; but I will this Moment remove it: So that Moment ſends for a Lawyer, and makes the propoſed Settlement; then gives Orders that a Mercer ſhould be fetched for her, to take her Choice of the moſt modiſh Silks, and then for a Silk Night-gown, for her to wear till her Cloaths were made; as, alſo, for all manner of Linen, Shoes, and Stockens. Then, having new-rigg'd her from Top to Toe, Now, ſaid he, my Dear, you are intirely mine; give me Directions, that I may ſend your Husband what he can challenge as his own; ſo writes the following Letter:

" Sir,

" Leſt the Abſence of her, who unthinkingly " gave herſelf to you for a Wife (tho' not at her own " Diſpoſal, being mine before), ſhould cauſe you any " further Trouble, theſe are to ſatisfy you, that I " have retaken Poſſeſſion of my own; ſo ſend you " back her Cloaths, as being all you can claim a " Right to. I am yours, *R. S.*"

Having ſeal'd up the Letter, and bundled up the Cloaths, a Porter was call'd, to whom Orders were given, to carry the Bundle and Letter to the moſt perplex'd and concern'd *Quarll*, who ſpent the Night in unſpeakable Torment. A thouſand diſmal Accidents glar'd at his alarm'd Fancy, which created new Racks for his tortur'd Soul. He tumbles on his Bed like an unmaſted Ship toſs'd about by a violent Storm, curſing the tedious Hours for creeping thus in the dark Night; taxing the Sun with Sloth, and Nature with Unkindneſs. Thus, like one bereft of his Senſes, and quite void of Reaſon, he ſnarls at the whole Creation.

At length, the long-wiſh'd for Day having ſent forth its Dawn, to proclaim its Approach, he ſtarts from

from off the Bed whereon he lay, as if upon Thorns, and, like a mad Man, runs about to inform himſelf of what he dreads, more than Death, to know: But, having ſpent ſeveral Hours in diligent Inquiry after lately-befallen Accidents, without hearing of any; Jealouſy creeps in, which, in ſome meaſure, removes his former Fears, but nowiſe leſſens his Pains: Thus he returns Home as much rack'd as before.

Being arriv'd, he finds on his Table a Bundle, and a Letter, which his Landlady told him were brought by a Porter. His Impatience to know the Contents of both was equal; but the Bundle being moſt ſurpriſing to him, he precipitately opens it firſt; which finding to be every individual Part of the Cloaths his Wife had on the Day before, when ſhe went out; with the Surprize, he lets it drop out of his Hands, and, like one Thunder-ſtruck, remains ſpeechleſs for ſeveral Minutes: Then, fetching a deep and heavy Sigh, attended with a Shower of Tears, he bitterly exclaims againſt himſelf for queſtioning the Faithfulneſs of that Love, of which he now has ſuch fatal Proofs.

Thus, concluding ſhe had drown'd herſelf, and that the Letter would inform him of the Cauſe thereof; he takes it up, ſaying, O that thou hadſt been a timely Forerunner of the fatal Tidings thou art Bearer of! Yet, for her dear ſake that wrote it, I'll peruſe thee, tho' thy Contents be but Racks for me, and the moſt cruel Tortures that ever were or can be invented.

But great was his Surprize, when he found it to come from a Man; and inexpreſſible his Confuſion at the Contents: His Senſes are all in an Uproar; he blames his Eyes for not ſeeing right; his Apprehenſion for miſtaking the Meaning: His blind Love taxes his Reaſon with Raſhneſs, the miſtaken Expreſſions being but Illuſions proceeding

from an Oppreſſion upon the Intellects: So lays down the Letter till his diſturbed Mind was better ſettled. Yet he cannot be eaſy; he muſt, with ſome other Writing, try whether his Eyes are ſtill defective: On which, finding no Fault, he haſtily takes up the Letter again; but, alas! it was the ſame as before. My Judgment, ſaid he, has been as much wronged as my Love. So, after few Conſiderations, calling to mind, that as an Accident had procured her to him, he ought, without Reluctancy, to ſurrender her again; having made a Reſolution never to venture any more on that uncertain State, which commonly promiſes Happineſs, but often brings Sorrow; he ſhifts his Lodging, and goes to live where he was unknown, the better to paſs for a Batchelor; in which free Station he enjoy'd Peace undiſturb'd, and Pleaſures uncontroul'd, for the Space of twelve Months: But croſs Fate ſtill purſues him; he muſt again be fettered, and bear yet heavier Chains than before. A ſecond Mate is allotted him, who, tho' very chaſte, dooms him wretched, being ſhort of other Qualifications neceſſary in a Wife to make a Husband happy.

This Woman had been bred up from her Infancy under the Care of a Lady, whoſe two Daughters *Quarll* taught to ſing, and had lived with her in Station of a Chamber-Maid, ever ſince ſhe was big enough to officiate in that Place; during which Time, having behav'd herſelf to her Miſtreſs's Content, ſhe gain'd her Affection; ſo that this good Lady being deſirous to advance her Maid, whoſe Age fitted her for Marriage, the chief Settlement for a Woman, ſhe caſt her Eye upon her Daughters Singing-Maſter, who ſhe thought would make her a good Husband, having obſerv'd him, ever ſince he came to her Houſe, to carry and behave himſelf

ſelf very decently. Thus, having declared her Mind to her, who had already a great Inclination that Way, ſhe readily ſubmitted to her Lady's Will, who promiſed to bring it about.

The good Lady, having conceived the principal Means to bring her Deſign about, took the Opportunity of *Quarll*'s next coming, to propoſe it to him, promiſing to make her worth Three hundred Pounds, which was the only Motive that could engage him to break the Reſolution he had made. The young Woman being alſo very agreeable in her Perſon, and extraordinarily obliging to him, he readily accepted the Offer.

The old Lady, having ſo far prevailed upon him, is reſolved to puſh on till quite concluded; ſo has them married in leſs than a Week, and gave them Lodging in her Houſe, where they continued but one Month. The new-married Wife, thinking herſelf, in ſome meaſure, under Confinement, whilſt in the good Lady's Houſe, to whom Duty and Gratitude obliged her to be more than indifferently obſerving, being likewiſe ſomewhat ambitious of living great, perſuades her Husband to take a Houſe, and furniſh it; which being done according to her Deſire, they went away from the kind old Lady to live by themſelves, without conſidering the Expence of Houſekeeping, which they both, till then, had been Strangers to, but, in a little Time, became too well acquainted with.

The Three hundred Pounds being gone in furniſhing the Houſe, and paying Two Years Rent, and as many Years Wages to a Couple of Maids, one whereof ſhe kept in the Station ſhe herſelf had but lately overcome; *Quarll* was oblig'd to reduce his Charges, and level his Expences to his Income; ſo diſcharges the ſuperfluous Servant, whoſe Buſi-

neſs was only to indulge her Indolence, and increaſe her Pride.

That ſudden leſſening of her Attendants check'd her ambitious Diſpoſition, in ſuch a manner, that it threw her into the Spleen; which was like to have coſt him more Money in Doctors, than the Servant's Wages which he endeavour'd to ſave.

Being taken very ill, and knowing not what to complain of, a Doctor was granted, at her Importunity, rather than her Need; who, being come, and finding her Indiſpoſition lie in her Temper, more than a Defect of Nature, order'd her Medicines to make them both in the ſame Condition.

Her Strength decaying, and the Apothecary's Bill increaſing, which are the uſual Effects of imaginary Illneſs, made her Husband apprehenſive, that conſiderable Charges might accrue from her fanciful and imaginary Diſtemper, which he would not indulge; and fear'd to check too ſuddenly, leſt it might produce ſome other ill Effects: So, in Compliance to her natural Pride, he propoſes her going in the Country, as being a proper Expedient to ſave his Money, and to be rid of a grunting Companion, at leaſt during the Summer.

This Propoſal, ſuiting her Ambition to imitate Quality (who, for the generality, go out of Town about that time of the Year), was ſoon accepted of; and that Opportunity of being freed from one of the greateſt Plagues which can befal a Man, by him as ſoon improv'd.

Quarll, having got her in the Mind, was no-wiſe dilatory to get it perform'd; but made diligent Inquiry about the moſt convenient Place in the Country, for Remoteneſs and Cheapneſs; which being informed of, he forthwith takes Horſes; and, having found a good old Countryman, with his Wife

Wife and Daughter, in *Yorkſhire*, whoſe diligent Cares, and frugal Living, whilſt young and ſtrong, had been rewarded with a moderate Competence, to keep him from toiling when grown old; who, having a pleaſant and commodious Habitation, diſtant from meddling and inſpecting Neighbours, and Room to ſpare, were very glad to take in a Gentlewoman to board, being ſome Company for them in their remote Living, and therefore ſtood upon no Rate; which ſuiting *Quarll*'s Circumſtance and Wiſhes, he began to conſult on Means to keep his Wife there for a Conſtancy: And as he well knew ſhe never would conſent, nor he be able to force her to it by Violence, he applies to Stratagems. Thus, having given her the beſt Character he could to the old People for good Humour, he tells them, that indeed ſhe had one Failing, but that it was no-wiſe troubleſome, provided one give her her Way: She is very vapouriſh, and looks for great Attendance: O dear! that's Quality Diſtemper. Well, if that be all, replied the old Folks, ſhe ſhall not want for any one Thing. More, ſaid he, I muſt caution you of, which is this: She will ſoon be tired of her Lodging, and will be for returning to *London*; ſo will ſeek all Opportunities to ſteal away, if ſhe finds herſelf oppoſed in her Deſires: Therefore 'tis beſt not to contradict her directly, but be ſure watch her narrowly, leſt ſhe gives you the ſlip. Never fear, reply'd the good People; we'll take care of that: She never ſhall go one Step alone. She is not apt to lay violent Hands upon herſelf, and do herſelf a Miſchief? No, no, reply'd he, there's no Danger of that; you may truſt her alone within Doors at any time, but never abroad. One Thing more I muſt give you Notice of; that is, when ſhe finds ſhe cannot get away, ſhe'll be for ſending Letters: I charge you let her have no

Paper, only at firſt, to write to me once, or twice, or ſo; and that you'll gueſs, when proper, by her railing, which will be a Token of her being diſcompoſed: And, as for her Diet, ſhe is ſomething dainty; but I ſee you have Plenty of Poultry, which ſhe loves very well. O dear Sir, anſwer'd the old Woman, ſhe ſhall have Fiſh, Fleſh, and Fowl, when ſhe pleaſes. We have a fine Pond in the Ground, well ſtock'd with Fiſh; and Cocks and Hens enough, you ſee, about the Yard; and, for Butchers Meat, 'tis but two or three Hours Ride to the next Town.

So *Quarll* having agreed, and paid one Quarter before-hand, which he promiſed to do whilſt ſhe boarded there, he returns to *London*, in order to fetch his Wife; who, having projected a Greatneſs of Living in the Country, which ſhe was diſappointed of in Town, immediately inquired into the Appearance of the Houſe, the Handſomeneſs of the Lodgings, and Gentility of the Neighbours: To which Queſtions *Quarll* took care to anſwer ſuitable to her Inclination. So, having concluded to go the next Day, they went out to make Proviſion of ſuch Things as cannot well be had in the Country; as *Nantz* Brandy, Ratafia, Uſquebaugh, Coffee, Chocolate, and ſuch Things as were neceſſary for genteel Company.

Being provided with every-thing, they ſet out the next Day; but, as neither Lodgings, Houſe, or Neighbourhood, anſwered her Ambition, nor his Commendations; he contrived to arrive in the Night, that ſhe might not find the Deceit: And as the good People of the Houſe, according to Direction, ſhewed her abundance of Reſpect, giving her the Title of Lady, and a good Supper being prepared; ſhe inquired no further into the Matter.

The

The next Morning *Quarll*, having repreſented to his Spouſe, it would be of Prejudice to him, if he ſtayed any longer from his Scholars, having already loſt ſix Days, took his Leave of her, and left her in Bed, it not being her uſual Time to riſe: So having promiſed to be with her in a ſhort time, to ſee how ſhe liked her Lodgings, he returned to *London*, having firſt renewed his Charge to the good People of the Houſe, of giving her her Humour; and, above all, not to let her go out alone, nor conſent to her coming up to *London*; which, in a little time, he queſtioned not but ſhe would be very deſirous of.

Quarll being gone, the old People, according to their Charge, were extraordinarily diligent and careful in pleaſing their new Lodger; who, finding her Ambition gratify'd by their Obſervance, kept in that Day: But the next Morning, having a Fancy to walk out, the young Woman of the Houſe took her to ſee the Ground and Cattle which belong'd to them, as being the principal Things ſhe could ſhew her; there being neither Houſe nor Habitation, but their own little Cottage, within Sight. She, who thought her Lodging to be in a handſome and creditable Houſe, near a genteel Neighbourhood, with whom ſhe might converſe; finding the Reverſe of her Expectation, could not conceal her Paſſion at the Diſappointment; but falls a railing againſt her Huſband in ſuch a Rage as frighten'd the poor young Woman; who, doubting ſhe was going in one of her Fits, ran home to fetch her Father and Mother; who, being come, were as much frighten'd as their Daughter at her furious Countenance, the Blood being ready to ſtart out of her Face, and her Eyes out of her Head. Thus, fearing ſhe would grow unruly, each of them took hold of one of

her Arms, and ſo, in a manner, dragg'd her home; where, being come, they would have laid her upon the Bed: But ſhe, who took this Act of their Caution for an Effect of their careful Attendance, told them, that indeed ſhe could not find Fault with them; and that their Habitation might ſuit their Birth; but really it did not hers, which her Huſband very well knew; and therefore ſhe never would forgive him for bringing her thither, and that he ſhould ſoon know: So deſir'd them to give her Paper and Ink, if the Houſe could afford ſuch a Thing.

The good People, who had been cautioned to give her her Humour in that at the Beginning, having none at home, ſent the Boy that attended their Sheep on Horſeback to the next Town for them; then, leaving her to compoſe herſelf, they retired to bewail among themſelves her Misfortune, which they perceived to be the Effects of Pride, reflecting upon the Happineſs of their own Condition, and the Pleaſure of a contented Life:

" * Now, ſaid they, ſhe has been brought up in " a City where Exceſs of Pleaſure and Luxury " are made the only means to arrive at Content; " but, alas! how widely do they miſs their Aim! " Their Life is a continued Series of Care; their " Emulation and Vanity in Faſhions, Entertain- " ments, and ſuch-like, together with that inſe- " parable Companion Envy, only contribute to " make an unhappy Life ſtill more miſerable.

* N. B. *The Lines marked with (") are ſet down Word for Word with his Memoirs, for theſe Reaſons.* 1. *I thought it a Pity to alter any-thing from his Notions of the Pleaſures of a Country Life.* 2. *And the rather, becauſe it gives us very lively Ideas of the perfect Happineſs he enjoys in his Solitude.*

" Here

" Here this Gentlewoman wants for no manner
" of Neceſſaries to make a Life comfortable, but
" has rather a Superabundancy. Could ſhe re-
" ject that horrid, Pain-cauſing Quality of Pride,
" and learn a little Humility, 'tis that brings Con-
" tent, and ſweetens all the Misfortunes of this
" Life. How preferable is our Station to hers!
" how ſolid is the Pleaſure we enjoy in this ſo-
" litary Habitation, compar'd to the trifling Joys
" the Great Ones poſſeſs in the moſt populous
" Cities! O happy Fields, and ſilent Groves!
" where nothing but eternal Rounds of Pleaſure
" centre! Here no Debaucheries, Riotings, Fa-
" ſhions, and luxurious Entertainments; no Envy
" of others good Fortune; no Drunkenneſs, Swear-
" ing, and Blaſpheming the Mercies of the Al-
" mighty God, ever take Place, as in flouriſhing
" Cities; but Providence gives us all Things with
" a bountiful Hand: In ſhort, we have all we de-
" ſire, and more than we juſtly deſerve. Here
" the beauteous Birds, joyfully hopping from Bough
" to Bough, ſtretch their tuneful Throats, and
" warble out melodious Anthems to their great
" Creator's Praiſe; whilſt flowery Hills, in harmo-
" nious Echoes, repeat the ſame to the fruitful
" neighbouring Vales. Here's nothing to be ſeen
" or heard but univerſal Acclamations of Praiſe to
" the Great God of all Things. This is the real
" ſolid Pleaſure; this it is that makes us perfectly
" happy. For how much more eligible is the
" Company of irrational Animals, or even inani-
" mate Things, than the Society of Men who
" have diveſted themſelves of all Things but Shape,
" whereby to diſtinguiſh them from the moſt de-
" form'd Brutes, or, indeed, from more horrible
" Devils. This Gentlewoman has put us in mind of

" our own Happineſs, of which, before her com-
" ing, we were almoſt ignorant; but now we may
" ſee, that Happineſs conſiſts not in Riches, nor
" Content in gaudy Apparel.——But why do we
" tarry here? It is not proper to leave the Gen-
" tlewoman ſo long alone, leſt, in one of her
" Fits, ſhe ſhould do herſelf a Miſchief: There-
" fore let one of us go to her." So the good Woman of the Houſe went to her, and, finding her in Tears, uſed all poſſible Endeavours to divert her Melancholy, but all to no Purpoſe; for ſtill ſhe was interrupted by Exclamations againſt *That Villain! that Rogue!* her Husband. The good Woman, finding that Words could not prevail, thought a Glaſs of Ratafia might do better; ſo deſired her to comfort herſelf, and take a Glaſs of her Cordial; to which ſhe ſoon conſented, and after that Four or Five more, which had the deſired Effect; for her Melancholy was by this time turn'd into moſt violent Fits of the Spleen, and preſently into Drowſineſs. The Landlady, perceiving her Condition, deſired her to lie down, and refreſh herſelf by taking a little Sleep: So, laying her down upon her Bed, and watching her to Sleep, retired.

After ſhe had ſlept an Hour or two, ſhe awakes, in a very ſplenetic Humour, and calls to know the Reaſon why Pen, Ink, and Paper, were refuſed her. Indeed, ſaid the old Woman, we did not know that your Ladyſhip was awake; and we did not care to diſturb you; but I'll bring it you preſently: So went and brought it. Which ſhe no ſooner receiv'd, but ſhe began to write the following Letter.

Moſt

Moſt barbarous of Men,

WAS you afraid that my Indiſpoſition (for which you moſt deceitfully did perſuade me to leave London) *would not kill me quick enough itſelf, that you have decoy'd me to an Oven, the Dulneſs whereof is ſufficient to make any well-bred Dog pine it ſelf to Death; here not being a rational Creature to talk to, but the inſipid Folks of the Hut; who, being ſtript of their clumſy human Shape, will be as complete Brutes as their Oxen and Cows? Pray ſee that you forthwith fetch me hence, or expect to incur all the Reſentment an injured Wife can ſhew, as ſoon as arrived to* London, *where I ſhall ſurely come in a few Days, though I was to travel all the Way bare-foot.*

Yours, *&c.*

MARY QUARLL.

This Letter being wrote, the good People of the Houſe were in a great Conſternation, whether they ought to ſend it, or not; but, after ſome Conſultation about the Matter, they concluded it ſhould go, leſt her Husband might take it amiſs.

Quarll, who expected ſome ſuch Letter from his haughty Dame, as ſoon as ſhe had diſcovered the Cheat, had, with a great deal of Judgment, prepared the following Anſwer.

My

My Dear,

IF your Pride and Vanity do outrun your Reaſon, it is no Argument my Compliance to them ſhould haſten my Ruin: And if you conſult your Circumſtances, as I do my Ability, you'll not diſcommend

Your careful Husband,

PHILIP QUARLL.

And, with that, one to her Landlord and Landlady, whom he thank'd for their Care of ſending the Letter; but deſir'd they would not trouble themſelves with ſending any more, nor give her Opportunity of writing, ſeeing it did but aggravate her Diſtemper; and, above all Things, to have a particular Care ſhe ſhould not give them the Slip, and he would take Care to gratify them for their Trouble.

This obliging Letter, together with a Preſent of a Pair of handſome green Stockens, and Lemon-colour Gloves, to the Daughter, did ſo win the old Folks Affection, that they were extreme punctual in obſerving his Orders: But that to his Wife had a quite different Succeſs; for, inſtead of putting her into Conſideration, it ſet her in ſuch a violent Rage, as would ſcarce permit her to read it throughout: So, tearing it to pieces, ſhe ſtorms out, *Conſider my Circumſtances! vile Wretch! let him behold my Portion, whether it deſerves me no better a Being than a Hovel! Landlady, ſend immediately to the Town, and get me a Place in the Stage againſt To-morrow; for I'll go and tear that Villain to-pieces.*

The good Woman was not a little diſpleas'd to hear her thus deſpiſe her Houſe, which was the beſt

beſt within a Mile round; but as ſhe imagin'd it was the Effect of her Vapours, inſtead of vindicating her Houſe, which, though old and low-built, was tolerable large, and very convenient, ſhe ſeem'd to acquieſce with her, wiſhing it had been better for her ſake: But as for ſending to take a Place, it was then too late; for by that time a Meſſenger could be got to Town, the Office would be ſhut up; but that the next time ſhe went out, ſhe would take Care a Place ſhould be taken: So excus'd it for that Week. In the mean time ſhe gave her *her* Humour, being very reſpectful and obſerving; which, ſuiting her Pride, made her ſomething more eaſy, and in ſome meaſure diverted her raving Fits; for ſhe fully depended upon going the Week following, but was again diſappointed by one Miſhap or other, and ſo from time to time; till at laſt ſhe began to doubt of their giving Orders, meaning to keep her there: Thus reſolv'd to go herſelf; but, not knowing the Way, ſhe deſir'd ſomebody might be ſent along with her; which they were very ready to grant, but never could be had, being always out of the Way about ſome Buſineſs or other.

This continuing for the Space of a Month or more, and no News coming from *London*, ſhe began to think it was a Contrivance of her Husband's to be rid of her with only paying for her Board and Lodging, which ſhe underſtood he had done beforehand, and agreed ſo to do during her Stay, which, very probably, might be for her Life; but reſolv'd to diſappoint him, by privily ſtealing away, and at a venture ſeek out the Road to the next Town, not queſtioning but ſhe ſhould find ſomebody as ſhe went that would direct her: But the old Folk, having been warn'd of ſuch an Enterprize by her Husband, were too vigilant to give her an Opportunity of attempting it, never leaving her by herſelf

ſelf from the Time of her getting up to her going to Bed again: Which Over-attendance convinced her of her Impriſonment.

Thus, finding herſelf curb'd in her Ambition, diſappointed in her Pride, and trick'd out of her Liberty, without Hopes of being reliev'd; the Letters ſhe ſent to her Friends being intercepted; ſhe falls into a Paſſion ſuitable to her Caſe and Diſpoſition; which, having vented upon the People of the Houſe for abetting and adhering to her perfidious Huſband in ſo traiterous a Deed, her Spirits being exhauſted ſo prodigiouſly with raving, that nothing but a Cordial Dram could ever have brought them to their uſual Tone, and which ſhe by long Experience knew, calls for her grand Specifick; and, after ſhe had drank three or four refreſhing Glaſſes, ſhe became more eaſy, and retir'd to Reſt: When, having ſlept a few Hours, ſhe awakes ſomething better compos'd. Thus, conſidering that all the Reſentment ſhe was capable to ſhew could not mend her Condition; ſhe therefore concluded to make her Landlord and Landlady her Friends, that if ſhe did not enjoy her Liberty, as ſhe propos'd, ſhe might at leaſt enjoy a little more Content in her Confinement.

Thus ſhe reſolv'd, and indeed kept her Reſolution a long time; laying aſide her haughty Temper, and curbing thoſe violent Paſſions ſhe had ſo long accuſtom'd herſelf to, ſhe now began to be much more familiar and condeſcending, than what ſhe had hitherto ſhewn, to the great Joy and Surprize of the good People; who, by this ſtrange Alteration, were in great Hopes her Madneſs was wearing off; and, upon that Account, were extremely induſtrious to humour her in every Point; uſing her with all the good Manners they were capable of: Which ſhe eaſily perceiving, thought to make uſe of their

Cre-

Credulity to her Advantage; for ſhe was a Woman of quick Penetration: And, finding how egregiouſly thoſe ignorant People had been impos'd upon, in relation to her Phrenſy, ſaw the only Means to regain her Liberty was, to pretend a Recovery. And, accordingly, by a counterfeit Change of Temper, endeavour'd to perſuade the People into a good Opinion of her; telling them, ſhe could never requite their extreme good Services to her during her Indiſpoſition; and lamenting her own Unhappineſs in being ſo troubleſome and fatiguing to Perſons of ſo kind and obliging Behaviour. They, in like manner, anſwer'd, that if their poor Services had contributed any-thing to her Eaſe or Recovery, they were ſufficiently made Amends for all their Trouble.

Now the Scene was intirely chang'd; the raving, proud, ill-natur'd Gentlewoman became the moſt pleaſant, ſociable, and beſt-natur'd Perſon they had ever met with: And they, who juſt before conceiv'd ſo great a Diſlike to her, were now ſo delighted with her Company and Converſation, that ſhe was leſs alone than formerly; they always contriving ſome Diverſion or other to drive away her Melancholy, and to prevent a Relapſe; hoping to ſend the welcome News of her perfect Recovery to her Huſband: Frequently pleaſing her with odd Country Tales, ſhewing her all the Pleaſures their Fields, Gardens, and Orchards, could afford, with many other little Contrivances to paſs the Time away; while ſhe endeavour'd to divert them with the comical Adventures of the *Londoners*. This ſhe endur'd almoſt a whole Month, with all the ſeeming Good-nature imaginable; but finding herſelf in no Way to procure her Enlargement, and rather more ſtrictly guarded than formerly, reſolv'd to obtain her

Li-

Liberty by Stratagem, which ſhe deſign'd in the following Manner:

There was a Servant in the Houſe, whoſe Name was *Thomas*, a lively, brisk, freſh-colour'd young Man, and indeed a Fellow of admirable Senſe, and good Manners: This Spark was of a very amorous Diſpoſition, well vers'd in Intrigues, and extremely obliging in his Temper and Behaviour; who, as ſoon as he ſaw *Quarll*'s Wife, began to think of his former way of Living. Now this young Fellow was born in *London* of very mean Parents, whoſe Friends not being able to give him a Trade, he was oblig'd to enter himſelf a Member of the antient and honourable Society of Laqueys. His firſt Service was to a Widow Gentlewoman, where he learnt all the neceſſary Qualifications of his Employ; but his Miſtreſs being a very religious Woman, going to Church two or three Times every Day, where he was oblig'd conſtantly to attend her, and ſo much Gravity not ſuiting his mercurial Temper, ſoon oblig'd him to quit his Poſt. But he, being an arch Wag, and ſly Knave, ſoon advanced himſelf to be Footman to a young Nobleman. Here he began to ſhew his Genius; for his Maſter, being a young Gentleman very much delighted with Love-Adventures, frequently made uſe of him in thoſe Caſes; and, finding him to be of a ſharp, ready Wit, very careful, and well skill'd in Taciturnity, ſoon made him ſecret Meſſenger in ordinary to all his Intrigues; in which Station he behav'd himſelf admirably well, having all the Accompliſhments neceſſary for ſo weighty a Truſt, *viz.* Vigilance, Diſpatch, and Secrecy; and theſe ſo well manag'd, that he ſeldom fail'd in his Deſigns. This Poſt of Honour he enjoy'd for a long time, with great Credit and Reputation, and gain'd

ſo

ſo great a Share in his Maſter's Affections, that he likewiſe made him firſt Miniſter to all his Affairs.

Now *Tom* is arriv'd to the very Summit of his Fortune; regaling himſelf in all Kinds of Pleaſure, belov'd and truſted by his Maſter, honour'd and reſpected by his Fellow-ſervants, and, in ſhort, might be ſaid to be perfectly happy. But here that Jilt, which ſo long flatter'd him with her kind Embraces, at one fatal Blow removes all the Means whereby he aſcended, and puſhes him from the lofty Precipice to the deepeſt Sink of Poverty imaginable.

Tom's Maſter being a Lover of Variety, his Curioſity prompted him to ſee the Diverſion of a Country Wake, in order to ſtart ſome freſh Game; and, to that Purpoſe, diſguiſes himſelf like a plain Country Gentleman, and equipp'd his Man *Tom* in the ſame Garb, on purpoſe to make him his Companion in this Adventure. The Place where the Wake was kept was about ten Miles from the Nobleman's Seat; ſo each mounted his Horſe, and away they rode: When, being arriv'd at the Town, nigh which they were to hunt their Game, they both alight, and put up their Horſes at an Inn; and, having pull'd off their Boots, out they walk towards the Place of Rendezvous: As ſoon as they came within Sight of the Place, they beheld the Fields prettily beſpotted with different Companies, at as many different Diverſions. In one Place a Parcel of Wreſtlers, eagerly contending, with broken Shins, for a Pair of Gloves; in another, a Company of Cudgel-players, with batter'd Ribs, fighting for a lac'd Hat; ſome at one Game, ſome at another: But *Tom* and his Maſter, who car'd for neither broken Shins, or bloody Brows, reſolv'd to ſeek out ſofter Combatants.

After

After they had walk'd up and down the Field, ſeeing the ſeveral Diverſions; Well, *Tom*, ſays the young Nobleman, where's our Diverſion? Where are all the Girls got to? O, ſays *Tom*, we ſhall be in with 'em preſently. Hark! I hear the Noiſe of Cat-gut; and I warrant we find 'em there. So, following their Ears, inſtead of Noſes, they came to a moſt ſpacious Dome, vulgarly call'd a Barn; which they no ſooner enter'd, but *Tom* ſays to his Maſter, Here, Sir, here's Variety for you; here's Nymphs of all Sorts and Sizes; and, faith, of all Complexions: They're all clean and neat; all, all fit for the Game: Come, Sir, pick and chuſe. Which pretty ſmiling Rogue muſt be your Nymph? Come, let's ſee what you'll do; for I long to be at it. Do you want to ſee what I'll do? ſays the Nobleman; why, I intend to work Miracles; I ſhall make my Nymph a Goddeſs, before I leave her. Well, then, reply'd *Tom*, I ſuppoſe I may take the Privilege to make my Girl a Nymph, at leaſt.

While they were thus talking, they ſtood like two Hawks hovering over their Prey, not knowing on which to fix their fatal Talons, and the Ruſticks ſtaring at 'em with open Mouths, and diſtended Noſtrils, not knowing what to think of 'em. At length Mr. Scraper, by tuning his melodious batter'd Fiddle, ſummons all the Girls to Readineſs, each preparing her Feet for the Sport; while every *Hob* began to ſeize a Partner, and *Tom* and his Maſter (in the mean time, you may be ſure) were not idle: For, offering their Service to a Couple of pretty Cherry-cheek'd Rogues, as *Tom* call'd them, the innocent Girls very gladly accepted their Offers, little dreaming their wicked Intentions; but the Miſchief was, the Nobleman had got the Girl which *Tom* had the moſt Inclination to; which caus'd

caus'd ſuch a ſecret Envy in his Breaſt, that it became the fatal Cauſe of his unfortunate Diſgrace.

Now the Dance was begun with great Fury on both Sides; the Girls ramping and tearing, and the Fellows pulling and haling, and ſhoving, and kiſſing, and tumbling, like ſo many mad Devils, while *Tom* and his Maſter, being Strangers to ſuch kind of Diverſion, ſtood like two Images, and the Country Fellows mocking 'em; which *Tom* obſerving, and ſeeing his Partner very dull, thought they ſhould never outdo him in Caterwauling: Therefore ſhruging up his Shoulders, and rubbing his Ears a little Bit, he began to be as briſk as the beſt. The Nobleman, obſerving his Man *Tom*'s Alteration, thought proper to follow his Example; ſo puſhing down two or three Girls, fell upon 'em, and kiſs'd 'em till they were almoſt ſtifled; then, hoiſting 'em up, extends his Mouth to a full Yawn, and laughs as loud, and with as great a Grace, as any of 'em; while *Tom*, to ſhew his Activity, jumps about a Yard high, always taking care to light upon ſomebody's Toes; which generally put the whole Company into a loud Fit of Laughter, except the Perſon hurted; who, in Complaiſance to the reſt, was oblig'd to put her Mouth in a grinning Poſture.

Thus they became the moſt facetious Companions imaginable (every one praiſing the two Gentlemens good Humour and Activity); and, in ſhort, became the Wonder of the whole Company. But *Tom* and his Maſter, having tir'd themſelves and their Partners ſufficiently, began to think of retiring, in order to refreſh their weary'd Limbs; and, motioning the ſame to their Nymphs, the poor Girls very willingly accompany'd them. Now they thought themſelves ſecure of their intended Sport, and conducted them, for that Purpoſe, to the Inn where they had put up their Horſes.

As ſoon as they were ſat down, they order'd Wine to be brought, and a Supper got ready, in order to detain and intoxicate the Girls, if poſſible; and therefore they ply'd 'em very cloſe with Liquor: Now *Tom*'s Partner, being a very briſk lively Girl, never refus'd her Glaſs; but the Nobleman's was of a very mild, eaſy Deportment, and would drink but little: He, ſeeing her Temper, began to be very amorous, on purpoſe to try what that would do; but ſhe, in ſo ſweet and eaſy a manner, check'd his Rudeneſs, that it rais'd in *Tom* a moſt violent Paſſion for his Maſter's Partner. At length, Supper was brought to Table, which was no ſooner over, but Night began to appear: The Two Girls, perceiving the Time, deſir'd Leave to go home, which the Nobleman abſolutely refus'd; but *Tom*, thinking to make ſure of his Game upon the Road, conſented to go with his Partner; which the other hearing, begg'd not to be left alone, but that ſhe might go, likewiſe: The Nobleman (thinking he had not brought her to the deſir'd Pitch) as heartily deſir'd her to ſtay, vowing that nobody ſhould wrong or hurt her; but, when the other Gentleman return'd (meaning *Tom*), they would both conduct her home: So, by mere dint of Argument, prevail'd upon her to tarry till *Tom*'s Return.

Now *Tom*, as ſoon as he had got from the Town, began to attack his Fort, which, after a little Parley, ſurrendered at Diſcretion; ſo *Tom* raz'd the Walls to the Ground, enter'd the Caſtle, and took Poſſeſſion of the City: All which being tranſacted, he leaves her, promiſing to reviſit her the next Day, and bends his haſty Steps towards the Inn, with a deal of Impatience; muttering theſe Words, as he went: *What a Blockhead was I to let my Maſter be too nimble for me! Ah! Fool that I was, to loſe ſo delicious a Morſel, and take Poſſeſſion of ſo eaſy a Fool!*

Fool! who, as ſoon as ask'd, conſented: When the other, with all the pretty engaging Airs, ſo modeſtly checks any thing that looks like Rudeneſs! Well, faith, ſince it is ſo, I'll make the beſt on't, and try whether I can't chouſe him out of his Partner: So ſaid, ſo reſolv'd, and indeed ſo done.

For, as ſoon as *Tom* came in, the Girl claim'd their Promiſe; ſaying, the Gentleman was ſo rude, that ſhe would ſtay no longer: Deſiring 'em either to go home with her, or let her go by herſelf. But *Tom*, deſirous to renew the Sport, begg'd of her, with all the prevailing Arguments he was capable of, to tarry; telling her, he was a little tir'd with the Walk he had taken, and wanted to refreſh himſelf: So deſir'd her to ſtay, while he only took a Glaſs, and he would go with her. The Girl, very unwillingly, comply'd, and ſat down again. The Nobleman, finding *Tom* had no Mind to part with her, imagin'd he was bringing about what himſelf had ſo long endeavour'd in vain; and therefore, pulling out his Watch, ſtarts up in haſte, and ſays he muſt needs go, for it was paſt the time that he promis'd to be at a certain Place: So tells the innocent Girl he very unwillingly left her; but he hop'd this would not break their new Acquaintance, for he would pay her a Viſit in a ſhort time, deſiring to be excus'd for this time; and he believ'd he could prevail upon the other Gentleman to conduct her home. *Tom*, who underſtood his Meaning, follows him to the Door, and there receives his Charge; which was, that he ſhould bring her to a Houſe they both knew, about Three Miles off, as ſoon as poſſible: So took his Leave, mounted his Horſe, and went thither, impatiently waiting for his Prey.

Now *Tom* was extremely pleas'd with his Maſter's Intentions, reſolving to put the Bite upon the Biter; and, as ſoon as the Nobleman departed, began

gan to attack the Fortifications with all the Artillery Wine and ſoft Words could ſupply him with: But the Defendant, Proof to Battery of this kind, held out nobly a long time, and mov'd ſtrongly for a Ceſſation of Arms, deſiring Leave to go home: But *Tom*, acquainted with the various Turns of Intrigues, reſolv'd not to loſe his Game, being well aſſur'd he ſhould bring her to Articles in a little time; and began a freſh Attack, which laſted ſo long, that ſhe was oblig'd to cry for Quarters; but it being too late for going home, *Tom* perſuaded her to lie there; aſſuring her, that he would ſee her well provided for: And ſo, in ſhort, ſhe bluſhingly conſented.

Thus *Tom*, having gain'd his Point, orders a Bed to be got ready; and then deſir'd his Miſtreſs, who was, by this time, much overcome with Wine and Sleep, to go to Bed. The poor Girl (ſtill between Doubt and Fear) knew not what to ſay, but, trembling, denies what her Looks deſir'd; and, after a great many Arguments on both Sides, ſhe reſigns herſelf intirely to him. The ſly Knave, joyful of his Prey, conducts his Miſtreſs to Bed; but, as they were going, the old crafty Innkeeper cries, in mere Form, I hope, Sir, that's your Wife; for I would by no means have any-thing diſhoneſt done in my Houſe. Yes, yes (ſays our Rogue), you may aſſure yourſelf it is my Wife, or elſe I ſhould not have offer'd to go to Bed with her; while the poor Girl, hiding her Face, ran up Stairs as faſt as ſhe could.

They had not been long above, when the Nobleman, uneaſy at their Delay, returns to the Inn, and inquires after the Couple he left. Why, Sir, ſaid the Hoſt, they're a-bed. A-bed! ſays the Nobleman, a-bed! Yes, anſwer'd he; it being too late to go home, they took up their Lodging here. What! are they a-bed together? ſaid the Gentleman;

m n: Yes, yes, ſays the Innkeeper; I left 'em together. The Nobleman, hearing this, ſtood like one Thunder-ſtruck, his Eyes darting Lightning, and his Blood all in Flame; but, bridling his Paſſion, very coolly inquired where they lodged, ſaying he had ſome Buſineſs of Moment to impart to the Gentleman, and he muſt that Minute ſpeak to him. The Innkeeper, unacquainted with his Deſign, very complaiſantly conducted him to their Apartment; and, knocking at the Door, told *Tom* the Gentleman was returned, and wanted to ſpeak with him. *Tom*, not being yet undreſſed, knowing his Maſter's fiery Temper, and the juſt Reſentment he was ſure to meet with, opens the Window, and out he jumps, without ſaying a Word; and, having bruiſed himſelf with the Fall, lay ſome time upon the Ground; till, recovering himſelf a little, he precipitately got over the Garden-Wall, into which he had dropt from the Window; and ſcours over the Fields as faſt as he could, without ever looking back.

But having run himſelf out of Breath, and thinking himſelf out of Danger, down he ſits, reflecting upon his melancholy Circumſtances. *O miſerable Wretch!* ſays he, *what have I done? How dare I ever ſee my Maſter, who always repoſed his Truſt in me? And I, like a perfidious Villain, to deceive him! Certain Death attends me, if I go home; and, if I tarry here, there's nothing but Beggary or Starving; I have at once loſt all Credit and Reputation, and ſee nothing but Ruin, unavoidable Ruin. O Woman, Woman! curſed bewitching Woman! what an infinite Number of Miſchiefs are ye the Source of? But why do I exclaim againſt a Woman ſo innocent, and ſo charming, when I, the traiterous Deceiver, ſought nothing but her eternal Miſery? O juſt Heaven! 'twas you that ſav'd her from impending Ruin, and de-*

ſervedly threw all the fatal Effects upon myſelf: Well, I'll bear them patiently; load me with all the Evils you can bring, till they mount ſo high, you can lay no more. Raving and curſing in this manner, he tired his Spirits, and fell aſleep.

Having ſlept ſome time, he awakes, wondering where he was: *Did I dream*, ſays he, *or is it real? No, it muſt certainly be true; I am the moſt wretched Mortal breathing; the very ſame Ruin I intended the poor innocent Girl, has juſtly fallen upon myſelf; and what is become of her I know not, nor dare I to inquire; but I hope, as Heaven has hitherto protected her, it will likewiſe preſerve her from the evil Intents of my Maſter.* Reflecting upon himſelf in this manner, he walked about till Day-light, not knowing what to do, or whither to go: He was now a great Way from *London*, deſtitute of Friends or Acquaintance, little or no Money in his Pocket, and durſt not ſee his Maſter. Deſpairing in this Condition, he ſaw a Company of Haymakers going to work, it being Summer-time; and reſolves to make one of their Number, if poſſible; hoping by that means to keep himſelf from ſtarving, and work his Paſſage up to *London*.

With this Reſolution he attacks the Haymakers, aſking them from whence they came, and whither they were going? Which they anſwered very civilly, telling him they came from *London*, and were going towards the North of *England*: So, being balked in his Expectation of coming to *London* along with them, he knew not what to do; but at laſt reſolves to go along with them, hoping to meet ſomething in his Way that might make his Journey pleaſant; ſo tells them his Reſolution to make one amongſt them: But they, ſeeing a Man genteelly dreſſed petitioning for a poor Haymaker's Place, took him to be only in jeſt, and told him they

ſhould

ſhould be glad of ſuch a Companion, if he ſpoke as he thought. He proteſted to them the Sincerity of his Intention, telling them his Misfortunes drove him to ſuch low Circumſtances. They then ſaid they ſhould be very glad to ſerve him, and that their Maſter would be in the Field by-and-by, and he would hire him, for he wanted Hands: So he went with them, and tarried till the 'd Farmer came, who, finding a well-dreſſed young Fellow wanting an Employment of that kind, aſked him a great many Queſtions, which *Tom* anſwered very pertinently: The Farmer, therefore, taking it only as a Frolick, was willing not to balk him, and ſo hired him, ſaying, he might go to work that very Day, if he would; but *Tom*, wanting a Fork, told him, That, as ſoon as he could get his Tools in Readineſs, he would come; ſo hires a Man to go to the next Town to buy him one, which as ſoon as bought, he falls to work very pleaſantly.

Tom went with them from Place to Place, conforming himſelf to their Cuſtoms in every Point, being a very merry Companion, and much beloved by his Fellows: His preſent Life became much pleaſanter than his former, never inquiring after his Maſter, or Country Girl, nor did he know what was become of them. At laſt it fell to his Lot to be hired by the Farmer he then worked for; who, ſeeing him a tractable briſk young Fellow, aſked him whether he would be his Servant; for he then wanted one. *Tom*, after a little Heſitation, told him he ſhould be glad of ſuch a Maſter; ſo ſtruck a Bargain, and hired himſelf for a Year.

Tom had not been there much above half a Year, before *Quarll*'s Wife came down thither, who, being a genteel *London* Madam, reminded him of his former Intrigues, and raiſed in him an Incli-

nation for her ; but, being in ſo humble a Station, he dared not attack the haughty Dame, till he might find a favourable Opportunity ; and ſo took all Occaſions to oblige her, and was better reſpected by her than any of the others, ſhe often ſaying, that that Fellow had a certain *Je-ne-ſçai-quoi* in his Face, which at once claimed Love and Reſpect. *Tom*, underſtanding this, thought Time would certainly bring about his Purpoſe ; which not long after happened in this manner.

Tom, during her Alteration of Temper, had more Liberty of Converſe than before ; and often diverted her with entertaining Stories : And one Day, being alone with her, opened to her the whole Series of his paſt Fortunes and Misfortunes, which ſhe heard with great Attention and Pleaſure ; for *Tom* had never before diſcovered himſelf to any ; but, thinking to gain Credit with this Gentlewoman, made her only privy to it. When *Tom* was gone, ſhe began to reflect on the Fellow's Dexterity ; and, believing him well ſkilled in all kind of Adventures, thought he might be a fit Inſtrument for her Eſcape, and reſolved to adviſe with him about it : Accordingly the next Day took an Opportunity to call him to her again, when ſhe was alone, deſiring him to divert her with ſome of his merry Tales, telling him ſhe was then very melancholy. Madam, ſays *Tom*, I am ſorry I ſhould find you melancholy ; but I'll do all I can to pleaſe you. Ay, ſays ſhe, if you knew the Occaſion of my Melancholy, you would pity me, as well as be ſorry ; but you cannot be ignorant what a Priſoner I am made here, how conſtantly I am attended, and have ſcarce any thing but Brutes to ſpeak to : I can aſſure you that this Uſage is enough to make me as mad as the People take me to be ; for I never was brought up in this manner, which my

my Huſband knows; it is only a Contrivance of his to keep me here a cloſe Priſoner, if poſſible; but I'll deceive him; for if a Woman's Invention can find any means to eſcape this curſed Place, he ſhall be ſure to ſee me in *London* quickly, and that to his great Mortification.

The ſly Rogue heard her very quietly, and thought he might now have his deſired Ends: So tells her ſhe ſhould be releaſed that very Night, if ſhe pleaſed, and he himſelf would accompany her to *London*; for he longed to be there again: She was glad to hear him ſay ſo; and aſked by what means he intended to convey her thence. O Lord! ſays he, eaſy enough; I'll tell you how: I'll take a Ladder, and ſet it againſt your Window, and ſo come into your Room, and take your Cloaths, and every thing you have a mind to ſend to *London*, and carry them to a particular Acquaintance of mine; then I'll come back and fetch you, and conduct you to the next Town, which is not above five or ſix Miles off, and ſtay there for the Stage-Coach, and ſo both go to *London* together. The Gentlewoman, willing to get her Liberty at any rate, agreed to the Propoſal, only deſiring another Day to look after all her Things, and pack them up conveniently, becauſe ſhe would not hurry herſelf, leſt they ſhould miſtruſt, and ſtop her Journey.

Tom conſented to what ſhe ſaid, and wiſhed for the approaching Time; which being come, and all things in Readineſs, he brings the Ladder, and mounts up towards the Room; while ſhe as readily delivers him, from the Window, all her Baggage ready packed up; which *Tom* takes, and carries away, and preſently returns to fetch the Gentlewoman; who, overjoyed to think herſelf freed from that tireſome Place, gets out of Window, and began to deſcend the Ladder; but, being over-

eager, and not uſed to Enterprizes of that kind, her Foot ſlipped, and down ſhe tumbles, Ladder and all; which *Tom* ſeeing, knew the Conſequence, and ran away as he could, leaving Mrs. *Quarll* to get up by herſelf; for the Ladder, in tumbling, broke the Windows where the old Farmer lay, and made an horrid Noiſe, ſo that it ſcared the good Man out of his Sleep, who got up to ſee what was the Matter; and, perceiving the Gentlewoman's Window open, and a Fellow running croſs the Yard, cries out, *Murder! Thieves! Thieves!* which alarmed the whole Family; ſome getting Pitch-forks, ſome Pokers, ſome one thing, ſome another, in order to ſcare the Thieves; but the old Man, with his Fowling-Piece in Hand, like a noble Commander, led the Van, ſearching all his Houſe over for Thieves, and to ſee what he had loſt, carefully looking into every Hole and Corner, not daring to advance too faſt, for fear of a Surprize; and coming to Mrs. *Quarll*'s Room, whoſe Window he had ſeen open, calls to her a long time; but, hearing no Anſwer, fanſied ſhe was murdered, and therefore breaks open the Door, and ſearches the Room; but there was no Mrs. *Quarll* to be found; they ſtared one at another, not knowing what to think. However, when they had examined all the Houſe, they boldly ſallied into the Yard to hunt the Thieves there; and looking about, they perceived ſomething under the Ladder, which looked like Womens Cloaths; ſo taking it up, they pulled from under it a real Woman, ſomething like Mrs. *Quarll*; and, looking more narrowly, perceived it to be the very ſame individual Perſon almoſt dead with the Fright, and the Bruiſes ſhe had received.

And now their greateſt Wonder was, how ſhe came thither: The old Man ſaid, he believed that

ſome

ſome Thieves had gotten into the Houſe, and, to prevent her crying, had ſtopped her Mouth, and threw her out of the Window. But, ſays another Wiſeacre, how came ſhe to have her Cloaths on? I am ſure ſhe ought to have been a-bed. Now, adds he, I believe the Devil tempted her to throw herſelf out at Window; and that muſt certainly be he you ſee run croſs the Yard ſo ſwiftly. Thus they diſputed a long time, but at laſt agreed, that ſhe ought to be carried to Bed again, and have Care taken of her; and ſo carried her up-ſtairs; and then went to finiſh their Search, while the good old Woman and her Daughter undreſſed her, got her to Bed, and ſat up with her all that Night.

After all was finiſhed, the old Man, willing to know what Quantity of Men he had loſt, calls a general Muſter; and, finding *Tom* miſſing, wondered where he was got to, aſking if he lay at home that Night: They told him, No; but they believed he was gone a Sweethearting. A Sweethearting! ſays the old Fellow; well, let him be there always; for he ſhall never come hither again; How do I know but he has ſent the Thieves to rob me, or that he is one of them himſelf? If he ever comes hither, I'll turn him about his Buſineſs as ſoon as I ſee him. But *Tom* underſtood better things than to come thither again; for he knew the Adventure would be blown, and then he ſhould be certainly diſcarded with Diſgrace; ſo was reſolved to make the beſt of what he had got; went away, and never was heard of again.

Mrs. *Quarll*, as ſoon as come to her Speech, confeſſes the whole Intrigue, and lays the Blame upon her Huſband; ſaying, he ſent her thither to be murdered; and now he had his deſired End, only that ſhe was the unhappy Cauſe of her own Death. The old Man, as ſoon as he knew the

Matter perfectly, writes to her Huſband a full Account of the whole Story; telling him he was in a fair way to loſe his Wife; and that, if it ſhould ſo happen, he had no Occaſion to ſend for his Wife's Cloaths, for ſhe had before loſt them; and tells him by what Means. *Quarll*, as ſoon as he had the Letter, was very much troubled at his Wife's Folly; but reſolved, if ſhe recovered, ſhe ſhould tarry ſome time without Cloaths, which he knew would be Puniſhment enough to her Pride: So writes back to them, that they ſhould take all poſſible Care to reſtore her to her Health, and likewiſe to prevent any thing of that kind for the future; telling them, that in a little time he would ſend her ſome Cloaths, and make them Amends for their Trouble.

Mrs. *Quarll*, in about a Month, began to be upon the mending Hand; which her Huſband being informed of, reſolved to make her ſtay another Month without Cloaths, which he knew would be a greater Puniſhment than the other Month of Sickneſs: But here he was miſtaken; for it was almoſt three Months before ſhe perfectly recovered; who, finding that, before that time, her Huſband had ſent her ſome fine new Cloaths, was, in great meaſure, reconciled to him; and reſolved, during her Stay there, to be much more eaſy in her Mind than before.

The good People, whom ſhe had often ſcared with her outrageous Paſſion, were very glad to ſee her ſo calm, and took that Opportunity to repreſent to her the Happineſs of her Condition; being well attended, and as well provided with all Neceſſaries, free from that Subjection ſhe might be under, if with her Huſband, whoſe croſs and ill Humours ſhe would be obliged to bear with; beſides twenty other

other Vexations incumbent to a married Life, from which ſhe was ſcreened by his being from her.

The old Woman's wiſe Remonſtrances, being backed with the ſudden Arrival of a freſh Supply of ſeveral Sorts of choice Drams, as alſo the enſuing Quarter's Money for her Board, and the Seaſon rendring the Country extremely agreeable, made her patiently ſubmit to continue there till the Fall of the Leaf; againſt which Time ſhe would contrive ſome Way or other to go, if her Huſband did not come for her.

But *Quarll*, who ever ſince her being in the Country, had enjoy'd the uncontrouled Pleaſures of a ſingle Life, having no Mind to interrupt them by her Preſence, took care to ſecure her there; ſending her Guardians now-and-then freſh Charge to be watchful over her, and a ſmall Preſent to encourage them to it.

But ſurly Fate, who ever was averſe to his Happineſs, ſuggeſts a new Interruption thereto. *Quarll*, having given over Houſe-keeping, happened to come and live at a Mantua-maker's of vaſt Buſineſs, and reputed worth Money. She was a ſingle Woman, pretty handſome, but intolerable proud and conceited; which was the Cauſe of her being ſtill unmarried, thinking herſelf too good for any Tradeſman, or any thing below a Gentleman; which ſeeing no Proſpect to get, being courted by none, ſhe became a general Man-hater: But *Quarll*, who was an handſome young Man, and of a genteel Employ, tho' not a Gentleman, coming to lodge at her Houſe, reconciled her to the Sex in a little time, and made her change her Reſolution never to marry, heartily wiſhing he would court her: Therefore, by her more than common Attendance for a Lodger, did all ſhe could to give him Invitation, but all to little Succeſs; for

Quarll, who had been already twice incumbered in the troubleſome State of Matrimony, and but lately rid of his laſt Plague, had no mind to venture any more; ſo did not anſwer her Expectation; but her Love increaſing daily, without being taken Notice of, ſhe was obliged to declare it to an old Gentlewoman, who lodged in the next Room to him; who, having doubtleſs been in the ſame Condition, was, by Experience, capable to give her Advice.

The old Gentlewoman (as 'tis peculiar to them, when paſt the Sport themſelves, to love to promote it in others) took upon her the Management of that Affair; and from that Time watched the Opportunity of ſpeaking to him, which was only in the Morning before he went out, or at Night when he came home, being abroad all the Day beſide: So, having reſolved upon it, the next Morning ſhe leaves her own Door open, which was oppoſite to his, waiting his coming out to invite him to a Diſh of Chocolate, which ſhe had ready for that Purpoſe.

Having, according to her Deſire, got him into her Chamber, as he was drinking his Diſh, ſhe feigns a Fit of Laughing. You wonder, ſaid ſhe, what 'tis I thus laugh at; but, I dare ſay, you'll laugh as well as I, when you know: Why, our Man-hater is in Love at laſt; in Love up to her Ears, as ſure as you are alive. Our Man-hater, Madam! ſays he; who is that? Don't you know? replied ſhe: Why, our Landlady, who has refuſed ſo many fine Offers: Lord, how happily might that Woman have married! She might have rode in her Coach Years ago; but no Man was good enough for Madam: This had ſuch a Fault, and that another: In ſhort, none could pleaſe her. 'Tis true, indeed, ſhe is very deſerving:

The

The worſt Part of her is in Sight, and that you know is not diſagreeable; but did you ſee what a fine Body ſhe has, you would be ready to run mad for her: Surely, ſhe has the fineſt Leg and Foot that ever Woman went on; and, for a Skin, ſhe may challenge the whole Sex: In ſhort, ſhe is fit for a King's Embraces. She has ſeveral good Properties beſides; and one above all, which perhaps you'll ſay is the Principal; ſhe has Money, and a great deal: Well, that will ſoon be diſpoſed of, I dare ſay; I wiſh I knew on whom: Sure it muſt be ſome Angel; for I have heard her find Fault with very handſome Men that have addreſſed to her: Pray, did you ever obſerve any Man to come here? He muſt be the Perſon; for all her Concerns are with Women. Indeed, replied *Quarll*, I never take Notice who comes: Beſides, I am ſeldom at home; ſo have not an Opportunity to make Obſervations. But I have, ſaid ſhe; and made it my Buſineſs to mind; yet never ſaw any Man in this Houſe ſince I came, but you: Suppoſe you ſhould be he at laſt? O, Madam, there is no Danger, anſwered *Quarll*; ſhe who has refuſed ſo many rich Matches, will hardly ſet her Mind on a poor Singing-maſter. How do you know that? replied the old Lady: Love comes by Fancy, and Marriage by Fate, and it may be yours to have her: So I would have you cultivate her Love, which I could almoſt ſwear you poſſeſs; you will find it worth your while: Here is an agreeable Woman in an extraordinary good Buſineſs, a Houſe well furniſhed, and I'll warrant Money-bags well filled: Now, if you are diſpoſed to make your Fortune, here is a fair Opportunity. *Quarll* was ſadly puzzled what Anſwer to make: His preſent Circumſtance prompts him to ſooth what his Condition obliges him to deny: His Buſineſs ſlackens, and

his Charges no-wiſe leſſen: His Income is dubious, and Expences certain; the moſt prevailing Arguments to embrace the Offer: But then a ſtrong Obſtacle ſtarts up; a Wife: But ſhe is out of the Way, and as good as dead whilſt her Living is paid for, which this propoſed Marriage will enable him to do, though other Buſineſs failed. That Objection being removed, his Anſwer was, He feared that Happineſs would be above his aſpiring to; which being according to the Mediatreſs's Wiſh, ſhe promiſed him her Aſſiſtance: So he took his Leave, and went about his daily Affairs, leaving the Management of that to her; who immediately went to inform the amorous Landlady of her Succeſs.

Quarll being returned at Night, the old Lady, purſuant to the Buſineſs ſhe had taken in Hand, follows him to his Chamber, with the joyful News, that ſhe had, by her Landlady's bluſhing, diſcover'd what her Modeſty would have concealed; that he was the Man beloved; and, therefore, ſhe would not have him delay his being made happy: To which he anſwered, As ſhe had been the firſt Cauſe of his Happineſs, he left the Accompliſhment thereof to her Direction. Well, then, ſaid ſhe, if I have the ordering of it, it ſhall be done next *Sunday*, as being, of all the Week, the moſt bleſſed Day: And ſo bid him good Night.

The old Gentlewoman, being made ſole Directreſs of that Affair, was very diligent in the Accompliſhment thereof; ſo had them married on the Day ſhe had propoſed. The Buſineſs was done privately, but the Joy it produced could not be concealed: Everybody read Bride in the new-married Wife's Face; ſo that Greetings daily filled the Houſe; which, for a Month, was a Reſidence for Mirth; and, during the Space of a Year, the Seat of Happineſs: Peace kept the Door, and Plenty attended them. But churliſh

churliſh Fate, which ever perſecuted him, would not permit that happy State to continue; and, the more to aggravate his Loſs, makes Love, the chief Author of his Bliſs, now the principal Inſtrument of his Sorrow: Jealouſy, the greateſt Plague that can befal a married Life, infects his Wife. She is upon Thorns whilſt he is abſent, and uneaſy when preſent, with the Fears of what he had done abroad: A diſcontented Mind often urges the Utterance of vexatious Words, and breeds Jarrings, Enemies to Peace; which, being often diſturbed, leaves her Abode, which is immediately taken up by Strife, and is commonly attended with Ruin, the decreed Influence of poor *Quarll*'s ſurly Fate. Buſineſs falling off from both their Hands, makes them negligent of the little they have: The Husband diverts his Cares abroad, whilſt the Wife drinks away her Sorrow at home. Thus Money growing ſcant, Credit muſt be pledg'd; which, being not redeem'd, expoſes the Owner to Diſgrace, which is commonly the poor Man's Lot.

The Mercer and Silkman, with whom his Wife dealt before ſhe was married, having received Money but once ſince her Marriage, and ſeeing her Diſcontent, imagined her Husband (who appeared ſomething too airy for one of her ſedate Years) was the Occaſion thereof, by his extravagant ſpending what ſhe, with much Care and Frugality, had ſav'd, arreſted him, without giving him Notice; leſt, being warned, he ſhould get away what ſhe might have left, and then abſcond.

Quarll, who till then had kept ſecret his being in the Guards, where he continued, to ſcreen him from thoſe Debts his eloped Wife might contract, is now obliged to let it be known, to keep himſelf out of Gaol.

His

His proud Wife, who thought Men of the beſt and genteeleſt Trades inferior to her Merits, ſeeing herſelf at laſt married to one, whoſe Station was looked upon to be as odious as that of a common Bailiff, fell into ſuch a Paſſion that it caſt her into a violent Fit; from which being recovered, ſhe flies out of the Houſe in a great Fury, ſwearing by all that was good, She would no more live with a Foot-Soldier; ſo left him in a ſad Confuſion: Yet he ſtayed in the Houſe, hoping ſhe would, when cooler, conſider of it, and be reconciled.

But great was his Surprize, when next Morning, inſtead of his Wife's coming according to Expectation, a Judgment is ſerved upon the Goods of the Houſe, at the Suit of an Upholſter: So the Houſe being intirely unfurniſhed, he was obliged to ſeek new Lodgings, where he continued a full Quarter without hearing of his Wife.

Quarll, hoping his Wife had left him in good earneſt, indulges himſelf with the Thoughts of being a third time delivered from the greateſt Incumbrance that can involve a Man; wondering how he could ſo often fall into the ſame Snare: Three Wives, ſaid he, in three Years! and every one equal Plagues, though of a different Nature! The firſt a Whore, of whom I was moſt luckily rid by Accident: The ſecond a proud, lazy, indolent Creature; ſhe by Stratagem is ſecured: And the third a conceited jealous Wretch; to her Oſtentation I owe my Deliverance. Well, now I am once more free, I'll take care how I hamper myſelf again: So makes a ſtrong Reſolution, let what would happen, to live ſingle from that time ever after.

But his Reſolution, though ever ſo ſtrong, cannot avert Fate's irrevocable Decree: A fourth Wife is allotted him, which will bring upon him more Vexation

Vexation and Trouble, than he has yet gone through; his Peace will not only be broken, and his Eaſe diſturbed, but his Life muſt be in Jeopardy.

One Evening that he was diverting his Colonel, and the reſt of his Club, with ſinging at the Tavern, as he uſually did once a Week, the Landlady (who was then in Company) much praiſed his Voice and Skill: The Gentlemen took that Opportunity to propoſe a Match between *Quarll*, who went for a Bachelor, and her, being a Widow: All the Company liked the Propoſal, and earneſtly urged on the Match.

Quarll, being a briſk, handſome, genteel young Man, which Qualifications have a vaſt Aſcendant upon the Sex, eſpecially on Widows, made a conſiderable Impreſſion upon the Hoſteſs; who, being already above Forty, was willing to intermix her ſupernumerary Years with thoſe of an Huſband of a leſſer Age: So, turning to Jeſt what ſhe heartily wiſhed to be in Earneſt, anſwers, in a joking Manner, That Mr. *Quarll* doubtleſs had, before that Time, made a better Choice; ſo would hardly agree to their Propoſal. A better Choice! ſaid the Gentleman; I deny that: Here's a handſome jolly Woman, a noble Houſe well-accuſtomed, a Cellar well ſtocked with good Wine, and Bags, doubtleſs well filled with Money: I ſay he cannot make a better Choice, nor ſhall he make any other; ſo here's to its good Succeſs: Thus he drinks to her, who, in a joking Way, puts it about. The Glaſs having been round, Now, Mr. *Quarll*, ſaid the Colonel, let us have a Love-Song to conclude the Matter.

Quarll, who thought the Gentleman had been but in Jeſt, in his Heart wiſhed it could turn to Earneſt: The Notion of a good Eſtabliſhment, and Proſpect

Proſpect of a conſiderable Advantage, having blanch'd over thoſe great Obſtacles his preſent low Circumſtances, and elevated Condition, made him overlook, he did all he could to forward what had been propoſed: So having, according to Requeſt, given the Landlady a Love-Song, he goes and ſalutes her with an hearty Kiſs; who, ſmiling, aſk'd him, Whether he thought ſhe was to be purchaſed with a Song? To which he replied, The Song was only to expreſs the Thoughts of his Heart, which he offered to purchaſe her Love. Indeed, ſaid ſhe, in a pleaſant Manner, I do not know what your Thoughts may be; but I never heard more agreeable Expreſſions. Well then, Widow, ſaid theſe Gentlemen, you cannot, in Gratitude and good Manners, but anſwer them kindly. Indeed, Gentlemen, ſaid ſhe, I can ſay no more, but that they are mighty pretty Words, and charmingly ſung. Well then, replied the Colonel, I'll ſay the reſt for you. The Lover having expreſſed his Paſſion in ſo ſoft Terms, and engaging a Way, you cannot, without doing Violence to your Good-nature, deny him what he requeſts in ſo melting a Manner; nor ſhall; I ſay the Word: Which was confirmed by all the Company. To which ſhe making no Anſwer, it was taken for granted. So the Marriage being concluded on, the next Day was fixed upon for the Performance thereof; being reſolved not to adjourn till it was over, they beſpoke a ſplendid Supper, and ſo ſpent the Night merrily.

The Wedding was kept all the Week, during which Time, every Gentleman was profuſe in his Expences, for an Encouragement to the new-married Couple, whoſe Trade increaſed daily.

Their proſperous Beginning ſeemed to promiſe an happy Life, living in Love and Peace at home, and being in good Repute and Credit abroad; but the

the ſame Fate, which all along haunted poor *Quarll*, is ſtill at his Heels: His Bliſs was but a Blaſt. His eloped Wife unfortunately happened to go by as he was going out: She had him immediately in her Eye, which as ſpeedily conveyed him to her Heart: The Addition which a charming new Suit of Cloaths, he then had on, made to his natural Handſomeneſs, put out of her Mind the Cauſe of that Diſdain ſhe had conceived for him, and turns it into a more paſſionate Love than ever: She cannot live any longer from him; ſhe muſt have him with her at any rate, and will not reſt till ſhe finds out his Lodgings; from whence ſhe reſolves to waſh all Sorrow away with her Tears, and ſettle him again in her Arms. So ſhe ſtrait goes to the Tavern ſhe ſaw him come out of, ſuppoſing it might be a Houſe he conſtantly uſed, on purpoſe to inquire where he lodged.

The new Wife, who was then in the Bar, to whom ſhe applied, perceiving in her ſome ſort of Diſorder, was very inquiſitive to know her Buſineſs; in which the poor Woman refuſing to ſatisfy her, ſhe told her, that he lived there, and that ſhe was his Wife; and therefore the fitteſt to know her Concern. At theſe moſt dreadful Words, ſhe falls, like one Thunder-ſtruck, on the Ground, deprived of all her Senſes; and, for a conſiderable time, lies as though bereft of Life.

This dull Scene turns the new Wife's Paſſion into Commiſeration; and ſhe pities that Misfortune which in her Mind ſhe before condemned as a Crime. This, ſaid ſhe, is a true Sign of Love, which a Harlot is not capable of: I cannot blame her for loving him, but rather condole her Misfortune. So, having ordered fair Water and Hartſhorn Drops to be brought, gave her ſome in a Glaſs of Water, which in a ſmall time fetched her

a

a little to Life; who, recovering, cried out, Had I not been ſo bewitched as to go from him, he would not have left me. Theſe Words in a Moment turned the officious Condoler into a revengeful Rival, who immediately imagined ſhe had lately lived with him as a Miſtreſs, and, doubtleſs, would endeavour to do the ſame again: So, giving her Hand (which ſhe kindly held before) a ſcornful Toſs from her, Why, you vile Woman, ſaid ſhe, would you have him to live for ever in Whoredom? You judge me wrong, Madam, replied the poor afflicted Woman; I am his lawful Wife: So produces her Certificate (which ſhe happened to have about her): Which cauſed almoſt as much Diſorder in the Beholder, as ſhe herſelf was lately in.

Having recovered her Speech, which the late Surprize had obſtructed, ſhe aſked her, in a violent Paſſion, Why ſhe had been ſo baſe as to give him the Opportunity to come and cheat her, by her leaving him; for *ſhe* was his Wife alſo? To which ſhe anſwered, That ſhe could juſtify her going from him, tho' indeed ſhe had great Provocation, he not proving the Man ſhe took him to be. What! replied ſhe in the Bar, was he not Man enough for you? I think you are very hard to pleaſe: However, ſince the Deceit made you leave him, why do you diſturb yourſelf about him? He has not deceived me, unleſs it be in having a Wife before: But as you left him of your own accord, he had no more to do with you. No! replied ſhe, in a Paſſion; but he ſhall find, and ſo ſhall you, that I have to do with him. So went away.

It being then about Noon, his uſual Time to come home from Market, ſhe went into a Publick-Houſe oppoſite to the Tavern, there to wait his Return, which was a little after. As ſoon as ſhe ſaw him, ſhe gave him a Call over.

The

The ſudden and unexpected Sight of the only Obſtacle to the Happineſs he then enjoyed, was moſt terribly ſhocking to him: He wiſhed he had met with Death to have miſſed of her; but to no purpoſe: She had him in her Eye, and was fully reſolved to have him in her Arms ere ſhe went; and as he did not come as quick at her Call as her Impatience requires, ſhe attempts to go over to him; but *Quarll*, who knew her fiery Temper, was afraid ſhe ſhould break out in a Paſſion in the Street; which would have expoſed him, and brought it to his new Wife's Knowlege, being near home: So haſtens over to the Houſe ſhe was in, to prevent her coming; and, judging his beginning to upbraid her with her Elopement would, in ſome meaſure, moderate her railing at him, he tells her, as he enters the Room, I hope, Madam, you have, by this time, found a Man more to your Mind. This was ſufficient to provoke a milder Temper to reproach him with his adulterous Marriage, of which ſhe was too certain; hers is but a Fault, but his a Crime: But as Reproaches are not proper Means to advance a Reconciliation, which was her Intent, ſhe bridles her Paſſion, and forces her Nature to a Submiſſion; ſo throws herſelf at his Feet, and falls a weeping; owning ſhe had committed a Fault, for which ſhe heartily repented, and promiſed to atone by her future Behaviour; calling Heaven to witneſs her Chaſtity during her moſt unhappy Separation.

Quarll, being of a compaſſionate Temper, was ſoon made flexible by her Tears: So takes her up by the Hand, who as ſoon fell into his Arms, uncapable of ſpeaking for weeping; but *Quarll*, who was in haſte to be gone, being waited for at Home, it being about his time of Dinner, complied with the poor afflicted Woman's crying and ſobbing, whoſe chief Requeſt was, that he would only ſee her home

that

that time: Which he preſently granted, to be quit of her: So ordered a Coach to be called.

His new Wife at home, being uneaſy at his ſtaying beyond his Time, came to the Door to look whether ſhe could ſee him come. At that moſt unlucky Time he was handing his other Wife into the Coach; which ſhe unfortunately ſpying, ran over, as ſwift as a Hawk flies after his Prey, and pulls him back by the Lappet of his Coat, as he was ſtepping into the Coach after her: The Diſorder this ſecond Surprize put him in, obliged him to go again into the Houſe he juſt came out of, where ſhe immediately followed him, raving and railing as much as the Provocation and her Paſſion did allow, leaving in the Coach his former Wife; who, by that ſecond terrible Surprize, was again ſtruck ſpeechleſs, and like one bereft of Senſe.

The Coachman, having waited ſome time, being impatient, calls in the Houſe, deſiring the Gentleman to make haſte, or elſe to allow him for waiting; at which, the new Wife comes out in a violent Paſſion, and bids him be gone, for he was not wanted. What ſhall I do with the Gentlewoman in my Coach? ſaid he; you had beſt take care of her; ſhe is not well; or tell me where I ſhall carry her. Carry her to the Devil, an you will, ſaid ſhe; and ſo went in. You may carry her there, replied the ſurly Coachman; you beſt know the Way: So goes to the Coach, and ſhakes her till ſhe came to herſelf: Then, taking her up in his Arms, I am bid to carry you to the Devil, ſaid he, but I believe you are able to go yourſelf; ſo I'll ſet you down here, that you may take your own Time. Having ſet her down, he then drives away. There being a Milaner's Shop juſt by, ſhe goes in, deſiring leave to ſit awhile, till ſhe was able to go. She had ſcarce been there three Minutes, but ſhe ſees her Husband handing

handing his new Wife over, very complaiſantly; which ſo exaſperated her, that ſhe fully reſolved upon Revenge; chuſing he ſhould be hanged, rather than her Rival ſhould enjoy him: So went directly, and took out a Warrant, which ſhe immediately ſerved, and had him before a Juſtice of the Peace, who committed him forthwith to *Newgate*.

The following Seſſions happening to be extraordinary great, by the vaſt Number of Criminals, his Trial, and ſeveral more, were put off till the next; ſo that he was confined at the Time he uſed to ſend the Money for his Wife's Board in the Country: And, not daring to employ any Acquaintance in that Affair, leſt they ſhould inquire into the Occaſion of his ſending that Money; he deſired one, who often came to viſit a Priſoner, to do him that Favour; which he readily promiſed, but did not perform: So that the People in the Country, who were uſed to be paid a Quarter beforehand, were a Quarter in Arrear: Which, with their Boarder's preſſing Importunity to come up to *London*, made them at laſt reſolve upon it; where being arrived, they immediately inquired after the unfortunate *Quarll*, whoſe Impriſonment they ſoon heard of, as alſo of the Cauſe thereof.

This did not a little exaſperate the already ſufficiently-provoked Inquiſitreſs; who, preſently imagining, with good Reaſon, that his confining her in the Country was merely for that Intent, reſolved to proſecute him according to the utmoſt Rigour of the Law; wondering who that good Perſon was that had him apprehended: So went, and conſulted her Friends, who adviſed her not to let her Husband know of her being in Town till his Trial came on; and then ſhe ſhould know the Proſecutor, and, at her own Diſcretion, back the Proſecution.

The

The mean time his firſt Wife, who had lately been diſmiſſed (the Knight who kept her being not long ſince married to a vaſt Fortune), having heard of *Quarll*'s being in *Newgate*, went ſtrait to viſit him. Her Grief, and his Surprize at her coming, ſtop for ſome time the Utterance of both their Minds: At laſt *Quarll*, who had a juſt Reaſon to tax her as the Author of his preſent Misfortune, reproached her with her leaving him, which was the original Cauſe thereof. The innocent, yet guilty *Sally*, whoſe Inclination, Diſpoſition, and Reſolution, had been violated, related the diſmal Account of her fatal Raviſhment; and pleaded her Cauſe with ſuch a prevailing Eloquence, as new kindled his former Love, and made him (tho' the Sufferer) give it on her Side.

Being thoroughly reconciled, and having ſpent ſome Hours in expreſſing both their Griefs, they at laſt parted, after a thouſand cordial Embraces; and as ſhe was enabled, by the Settlement the Knight had made upon her, ſhe ſupplied him with Money and Neceſſaries during his Confinement in *Newgate*; and was with him conſtantly every Day, almoſt from Morning till Night; and, when he was called upon his Trial, ſhe attended in the Court, more concerned than if ſhe herſelf had been arraigned.

The Seſſions being commenced, he was firſt called to the Bar: His Indictment being read, he deſired to be heard by his Counſel; which was granted. The Deponent having proved her Marriage, required the Priſoner at the Bar ſhould be obliged to live with her, or allow her a ſufficient Maintenance, as being his firſt Wife; at which ſhe whom he kept in the Country ſtarts up: That belongs to me, ſaid ſhe; I am the firſt Wife: So produces her Certificate. A third Wife appearing,

ſtartles both the Judges, and the Priſoner, who thought her ſecure.

Sally, who till then had been ſilent, ſeeing the Priority of Marriage ſo much pleaded for, thought it may be worth her while to claim it, being her Right, which ſhe may chance to turn to the Priſoner's Advantage; ſo addreſſing to the Bench, My Lords, ſaid ſhe, I did not think to apply for Juſtice; but, ſeeing theſe Women contending for that which belongs to neither of them, I think myſelf obliged to claim my Right: I am the firſt Wife, and pleaſe your Lordſhips. How! a fourth Wife, and indicted but for two! ſaid the Judges, in a great Surprize. Why, my Lords, replied an old ſurly Judge upon the Bench, if Truth be known, he has half a Score; I ſee it in his Looks: Theſe ſmock-faced young Fellows are ſo admired by the Women, that they have not Power to refuſe any thing. *Sally*, who thought to do the Priſoner Service, in taking the Privilege of firſt Wife into her own Hands, finding the Succeſs of her good Intent quite reverſed, heartily repented appearing, and would have withdrawn, but that the Judges told her ſhe was now become the Proſecutrix, and was obliged to go on in the Proſecution. This cauſed ſuch a Diſorder in her, who imagined ſhe ſhould be the unfortunate Occaſion of his being caſt, that ſhe was ready to ſwoon. *Quarll*'s Counſel, perceiving her Diſorder, imagined it might proceed from a Regret of the Miſchief ſhe had done; ſo put her in a Way to invalid her Depoſition: Now, Madam, ſaid the Counſel, I very much queſtion whether you can make your Aſſertion good: Pray produce your Certificate; you can do us no Hurt elſe. *Sally*, overjoy'd to hear that, ſaid, ſhe had none; chuſing to undergo the greateſt Diſgrace, rather than he ſhould come to the leaſt Hurt. I thought

as much, ſaid the Counſel. Well, well, replied the ſurly Judge, ſhe may have loſt it: Where was you married, Child? At *Chatham*, my Lord, I think, anſwer'd ſhe, very much diſcountenanced. At *Chatham*, did you ſay? reply'd the Counſel: I doubt yours has been a Sailor's Wedding, over a Pot of Drink; a Man's Wife till the next Voyage, and anybody's when he is gone. Your Lordſhips ſee how the Caſe ſtands. Yes, yes, anſwered a Judge; if ſhe is his firſt Wife that way, I dare ſay he is not her firſt Husband, by many. So ſhe was hiſſed out of the Court. Then the Judge addreſſing to the next Pretender, I hope, ſays he, yours will not prove a Sailor's Wedding, as hers did. A Sailor's! No, my Lord, replied the ſecond Wife; I have Witneſſes enough to mine: My Lady *Firebraſs*, with whom I lived, and her two Daughters, ſaw me fairly married in *St. Martin*'s Church. How came it, ſaid the Judge, you did not ſue him before he married the third Wife? You ſhould have prevented his cheating any other poor Woman. Why, my Lord, ſaid ſhe, I knew nothing of it; he kept me a Priſoner in the Country, at this good Woman's Houſe, where he decoyed me, under Pretence of being careful of me: I muſt go into the Country, for a Month or two, to take the Air! but, when he had me there, there he kept me ever ſince; charging the People of the Houſe not to ſuffer me to come up to *London*, nor yet to go out; pretending I was mad, becauſe I complained I was not well. A very pretty Device! replied the old Judge. Yes, my Lord, cried out all the Women in the Court (who were come in great Numbers to hear a Trial about a Rape committed by a Quaker upon a Maid of Fifty Years of Age), and a very bad Precedent, if not ſeverely puniſhed: Should this be ſuffered, a poor Wife will not dare to be

out

out of Order, or complain, in hopes to be made much of, for fear her Huſband, under Colour of giving her the Pleaſure of the Country Air, ſhall, when he has got her there, confine her, and ſo marry whom he pleaſes at *London*.

The Judges, to quell their Clamour, were obliged to call to them, and promiſe them it ſhould be no Precedent; and that they might be ſick at Will, and groan at their Pleaſure, and alſo accept of their Huſbands Kindneſſes when offered.

The Court being ſilenced, the Proceedings went on: And ſeveral of the Judges having been ſpoken to by ſome of *Quarll*'s particular Friends, who were related to ſome of them, they were more favourable in their Judgment, all but the old ſurly Judge, with whom no Intereſt had been made.

The three Wives then preſent having proved their Marriage, the Priſoner at the Bar was aſked, What he had to ſay in his own Defence?

Quarll, who thought his Wife in the Country was ſecure from coming againſt him, not having given his Counſel Inſtructions concerning her, was obliged to plead himſelf: My Lords, ſaid he, the firſt Deponent againſt me being run mad, and thereby unfit for human Society, I was obliged to think of ſome Retirement for her, as 'tis neceſſary for People in her Caſe. Unfit for human Society! replied the ſecond Wife, in a great Fury; and was going on in the ſame Temper, but was bid to be ſilent, and he to proceed: So, my Lords, ſaid he, I propoſed the Country, as the moſt pleaſant and wholſome Place, as alſo that which ſuited her Indiſpoſition beſt, being always ambitious to imitate the Quality, who commonly go into the Country in the Summer; which made her accept the Offer: There, my Lords, I boarded her with very honeſt and ſufficient People, in a handſome,

creditable, and pleaſant Houſe: A pleaſant Houſe! reply'd ſhe; a perfect Hovel. There, my Lords, I provided her every thing ſhe could want or deſire, as her Landlady, here preſent, can juſtify. His Counſel, who, by what he had ſaid, had taken ſufficient Hints to proceed, took the Plea out of his Hand, and went on: And pleaſe your Lordſhip, ſaid he, ſince by her Madneſs——My Madneſs! ſaid ſhe, interrupting the Counſel: I deſire, my Lords, this good Woman (with whom I have liv'd many Years) may be ſworn whether ſhe, in all that time, did ſee or diſcern the leaſt Symptoms of Madneſs in me. Indeed, reply'd the old Woman, I have often ſeen you in the Vapours; but I cannot ſay I ever ſaw you, what they ſay, raving mad, but once. My Lord, ſaid the Priſoner, I beg, this Letter, which ſhe ſent me a Week after ſhe was there, may be read; and then your Lordſhips may judge whether I do her wrong.

Orders being given from the Bench, the Letter was read. The old Woman, hearing her Houſe ſo deſpis'd, *where a well-bred Dog would run mad, if kept in*; and then her Husband and herſelf compar'd to *Oxen and Cows*; was not a little diſpleas'd: My Houſe, Madam, ſaid the old Woman, is not ſo *deſpicable* neither, as that comes to: I'm ſure there's hardly a better, or more convenient, within Ten Miles round it. As for the Room you lay in, no Gentlewoman, in her right Senſes, but will be contented with, eſpecially in the Country; I muſt be oblig'd to ſide with your Husband there: And for my Husband and me to be reckon'd no better than Brutes, you have little Reaſon to ſay ſo; for no Woman can be uſed with more Humanity than you have been: And as for your being confin'd, you never were ſhut up any-where, but always had the Liberty of walking about our Ground; only indeed I would not

conſent

conſent you ſhould trudge to *London*, as you often did offer to do. The old Woman having done ſpeaking, *Quarll*'s Counſel put it to the Bench, Whether the Proſecutrix ought to be accounted in her right Senſes. The Judges having given their Opinion, that ſhe was frantic; the old Judge, being diſpleas'd at their Anſwer, aſk'd them, Whether a Man or Woman's being frantic (which but few in this Town are, more or leſs) do impower either to marry again; and, if they will allow that, why did he marry a third? The ſecond is not mad. The ſecond, reply'd the Counſel, elop'd, my Lord, and was from her Husband half a Year; and 'tis to be queſtion'd, whether ſhe would ever have come near him, had ſhe not accidentally found this Opportunity to trouble him. 'Tis a plain Caſe, my Lord, ſaid another Judge; the Priſoner is guilty of the Crime he ſtands indicted for: Yet I don't ſee but that there is Room for Favour. His Conſtitution perhaps may require a Woman for the Maintenance of his Health, and his Inclination is averſe againſt vile Women: Beſides, my Lord, we don't hear, that he did cohabit or correſpond with more than one at a time; and never ſought a Supply, till he was deſtitute. In my Opinion, my Lord, he may be favour'd a little. The ill-natur'd Judge told 'em very ſurlily, That the Fact was plain; and that he was try'd according to the Laws of his Country; and muſt expect to ſuffer the Penalty of thoſe Laws: But he could ſee no Room for Favour, unleſs his Majeſty (*Charles* the Second) would graciouſly be pleas'd to ſhew it him; and it was intirely out of his own Power: So ſums up the Evidences, and refers it to the Jury.

The Jury went out, accordingly; and, after having ſtay'd ſome time, brought in their Verdict

Death. *Sally*, who was juſt by, no ſooner heard the terrible News, but fainted away, and was obliged to be carried out of Court: The three Wives likewiſe went away, upbraiding and reproaching one another with being the fatal Cauſe of loſing their Huſband, wiſhing one another never to be reliev'd by Man; and ſo parted: But *Sally*, as ſoon as recovered, went back to the Priſoner again, and ſtaid with him till the Court broke up; and then was allow'd a Coach to carry him to *Newgate*, and attended him there all that Night.

As ſoon as the Keepers came in the Morning, he calls for Pen, Ink, and Paper, which was brought him; and wrote the following Letter to his Colonel:

May it pleaſe your Honour,

I *AM now under the terrible Sentence of Condemnation; I need not tell you upon what Account, my Caſe being too well known to the World already: But as you have beſtowed ſo many particular Favours upon me hitherto, this emboldens me once more, in this my extreme Neceſſity, to rely upon your Goodneſs. 'Tis true, my Merit cannot lay Claim to the leaſt Mark of your Eſteem; but 'tis your Generoſity prompts me to beg my Life at your Hands; which, if you preſerve, ſhall always be devoted to your Service, by*

Your unfortunate humble Servant,

PHILIP QUARLL.

As

As ſoon as he had finiſh'd, he delivers it to his dear-beloved *Sally*, and deſires her to carry the ſame to his Colonel: *Sally*, joyful to ſerve him, takes the Letter, and away ſhe flies. Being come to the Houſe, ſhe delivers the Letter to the Colonel; who, having opened and read it, told her, That ſhe might aſſure him, he would do all that lay in his Power to ſerve him: So *Sally*, expreſſing her Gratitude, retir'd to carry the News to her Huſband: When ſhe came to the Priſon, ſhe found him reading very ſeriouſly, leaning upon his Hand, with Tears in his Eyes: She ſtood ſome time to look at him; but, finding he never ſtirr'd his Head, nor mov'd his Eyes, ſhe went ſoftly up to him, and ſpoke to him: He no ſooner heard her Voice, but he ſtarts, and looks like one juſt awake from a Dream; and then burſt into Tears, and could not ſpeak a Word; which *Sally* ſeeing, could not forbear weeping; and fell about his Neck, deſiring him with all Tenderneſs to ſtop the Torrent; for ſhe had ſome joyful News to tell him. What joyful News, ſays he, can you bring a Man under my wretched Circumſtances? Can any thing elevate the Mind whom Heaven itſelf has contriv'd to depreſs? Am not I the very Out-caſt and Scorn of Providence? Have not I been unfortunate from my Infancy? And why will you ſtill add to my Miſery? 'Tis you that now make me wretched: Had you not ſo compaſſionately aſſiſted me in this my diſmal Calamity with ſo much Tenderneſs, I then ſhould willingly have left this hateful World, without thinking of you: but why muſt I make you the wretched Partner of my Misfortunes? 'Tis that adds to my Uneaſineſs. O that I had not ſeen you in theſe my laſt Moments! *Sally*, interrupting him, ſaid, Come, talk not of laſt Moments; you may yet enjoy many happy Years;

your Colonel has promiſed to uſe his utmoſt Endeavours to preſerve your Life. I don't flatter myſelf with any thing of that kind, ſays he; but if ſuch a thing ſhould happen, I am fully reſolv'd not to tarry long in *England*, which has brought upon me ſo many dire Miſhaps.

The Colonel was as good as his Word; for he lov'd *Quarll* extremely well: And therefore, as ſoon as *Sally* was gone, he orders his Coach to be got ready, and away he poſts to my Lord *Danby*, who had a great Influence at Court at that time, and who was his particular Friend. When he came thither, his Lordſhip was not ſtirring; ſo he waited till he got up; who, as ſoon as come down, cries out, So, Colonel, what brings you here ſo ſoon? Did you come to breakfaſt with me? The Colonel, ſeeing him ſo facetious and pleaſant, told him his Meſſage. My Lord, as ſoon as he heard it, anſwer'd, That, upon his Honour, he certainly would grant his Requeſt; and made him ſtay to breakfaſt with him.

As ſoon as Breakfaſt was over, he took his Leave of his Lordſhip, and away he comes to bring the Tidings to *Quarll*, whom he found alone, *Sally* having juſt left him. The Colonel told him, He was ſorry to ſee him there, with other Compliments uſual in ſuch Caſes; and related to him the Succeſs he had with my Lord *Danby*: So deſired him to be of good Chear. *Quarll* fell at his Feet, and expreſs'd his Gratitude in the moſt thankful Terms imaginable; telling him, his Life ſhould always be at his Service. His Colonel, raiſing him up, told him, he was very well ſatisfied; and, after a little more Converſation, left him.

Sally, in the mean time, was not idle; for ſhe went and bought a rich Piece of Plate, and preſented it to the Recorder, that he might favour

Quarll

Quarll in his Report to his Majeſty; which had the deſired Effect: For, when the dead Warrant came down, he was excluded; and, in a few Days after, my Lord *Danby* procur'd his Majeſty's moſt gracious Pardon; which his Colonel brought him with great Joy.

Quarll, being diſcharged out of *Newgate*, reſolv'd not to tarry long in *England*; and told his beloved *Sally*, That he muſt now leave her, for he had made a Vow not to tarry in *Britain*. She endeavour'd to diſſuade him from his Intentions; but, finding it to no Purpoſe, deſir'd ſhe might accompany him. He aſk'd her, Why ſhe deſir'd to be wretched; telling her, he was doom'd to perpetual Miſery: But ſhe was reſolutely bent to follow him where-ever he went; and, accordingly, ſold what the Knight had ſettled upon her, in order to carry the Money with her.

Quarll hearing of a Ship bound for the *South Seas*, which in her Return was to touch at *Barbados*, the Captain of her having been Firſt Mate of the Ship to which *Quarll* had formerly belong'd; this encourag'd him to venture the Voyage. Accordingly, he went to the Commander, in order to agree with him about it. The Captain, after ſome Talk, began to call to mind their former Acquaintance, but wonder'd to ſee him ſo much alter'd as to his Condition; *Quarll* being very handſomely dreſs'd, and his Behaviour much better poliſh'd than formerly: So deſir'd him to give him an Account how this ſtrange Alteration had happen'd, and by what means he came to this good Fortune. Good Fortune! do you call it? ſays *Quarll*; I ſuppoſe then you look upon Men by their outward Appearance: But, did you know the World as well as I do, you would judge the contrary. Now, adds he, I'll give you a ſhort Account of my paſt

Life; and then I'll leave you to ſay, whether I am not rather the perfect Scorn and Mock of Fortune: So related to him his paſt Misfortunes; which *Quarll* told him in ſo moving a manner, that it almoſt drew Tears from the Captain's Eyes. As ſoon as he had made an End, Well, ſays the Captain, I thought that my way of Living brought upon me more Troubles than Land-men are ſubject to! for, ſince I ſaw you, I have been ſhipwreck'd twice; once upon the Coaſt of *Guiney*, where I loſt the Ship and Cargo, and but five Men ſav'd; the other time, homeward-bound from the *Eaſt-Indies*, a violent Storm aroſe, and drove us upon the Coaſts of *France*, where with great Difficulty we caſt Anchor, in order to refit our Ship, which was very much damaged in the late Storm: But, about twelve o'Clock the ſame Night we came thither, a moſt violent Hurricane blew in upon us, broke our Cables, and drove us aſhore; where again I loſt the Ship and Cargo, but all the Men ſaved: Thus I think I have been unfortunate; but, ſince they're paſt, never think of them: We ſhall have a pleaſant Voyage; and as you ſay you have a mind to reſide at *Barbades*, where I muſt touch in my Return, I'd have you lay out your Money in the Woolen Manufacture, and Cutlery-ware, which are very good Commodities in thoſe Parts. *Quarll* thank'd him for his Advice, and parted with him.

Away then he goes to *Sally*, and told her what he had been doing, and whither he intended to go. *Sally* anſwer'd, What was his Pleaſure ſhould be hers; and that ſhe would be a Partner in his Fortunes and Misfortunes, go whither he would. So *Quarll* went and bought the Goods which the Captain advis'd him to, and ſent them on board; and ſoon after follow'd with himſelf and Wife.

They

They had not been long at Sea, before his darling *Sally* fell ſick and dy'd, to his inexpreſſible Grief; wiſhing ten thouſand times he had dy'd with her. He began to be extreme melancholy, took no Reſt, and would eat no Victuals. The Captain was afraid that he would die alſo; and did all he could to divert him; but was a long time before he could bring him to his former Temper.

They ſailed on with a Side-wind for the Space of a Month; tho', it changing full in their Teeth, and very high withal, obliged them to caſt Anchor, in order to lie by till the Wind did ſerve; but, ſeeing themſelves made upon by a Pirate, they were obliged to weigh their Anchor, and make the beſt of their Way before the Wind, in order to avoid being taken by thoſe Infidels, who purſued them from four of the Clock on *Friday* Morning, till ten at Night the following *Sunday*; at which time there aroſe a Storm; the Sky look'd very black, the Wind being at North-weſt; and Clouds began to riſe and move towards them, having hung all the Morning in the Horizon: So that they took in their Top-ſails, and furl'd their Main-ſail: The Sea ran very ſhort, and broke in upon their Deck: However, they put right before the Wind, and ſailed ſo for three Weeks, when they made Cape *Horne*: They had no ſooner got round the Cape, but the Wind veer'd to the South, and it fell flat calm; which continu'd for two Days, when the Wind ſprung up at South-weſt, and they ſcudded before the Wind very ſwift, and made an Iſland whoſe Name none of them knew, the Ship having never been the Coaſt before; but there they found Wood, Water, and Herbs of ſeveral Sorts, ſome See's and Sea-fowls. Here they refreſhed themſelves for four Days; and then weigh'd Anchor, the Wind being fair at full South, and traded at ſeveral Ports on the Coaſt of

Peru, *Chili*, and *Mexico*. From Port *Aquapulco* they ſail'd, having a freſh Breeze, at N. N. E. They had not ſail'd above one Day, before the Wind veer'd to South-weſt, and blew a violent Gale of Wind; and there being a great Sea, ſo that their Ship took in a great deal of Water, the Wind, continuing two Days, increas'd to a very great Storm, which held for one Day and two Nights more; during which time they perceiv'd themſelves near ſome Rocks. The Storm rather increaſing, and it growing dark, they deſpair'd of ſaving the Ship; and as the Main-yard could not lower, the Ship's Tackling being diſorder'd by the Violence of the Storm; *Quarll*, being bold and active, took a Hatchet which tumbled about the Deck, and ran up the Shrowds, in order to cut down what ſtopt the working of the Main-yard; but, by that time he was got up, there came a Sea which daſh'd the Ship to Shatters againſt the Rock; and, with the Violence of the Shock, flung *Quarll*, who was aſtride upon the Main-yard, on the Top of the Rock; where, having the good Fortune to fall in a Clift, he was hinder'd from being waſh'd back again into the Sea, and drown'd, as every-body were that belonged to the Ship.

Quarll, in a diſmal Condition, remain'd the ſucceeding Night in the Clift, being continually beaten with the Daſhing-back of the Sea; and, being both bruis'd and numb'd, pull'd off his Cloaths, which were dropping-wet, and ſpread them in the Sun; and, being over-fatigu'd, lays himſelf down on the ſmootheſt Place of the Rock he could find, being quite ſpent with the Hardſhip he had undergone, and ſlept while his Cloaths were drying.

His Sleep, tho' very profound, was not refreſhing: The Danger, he had been lately in, ſo ran in his Mind, that grim Death was ever before his Eyes; which

which conſtantly diſturb'd his Reſt: But Nature, who wanted Repoſe, would be ſupply'd, tho' it be broken. Having ſlept a few Hours, he awakes almoſt as much fatigu'd as before, and faint for want of Nouriſhment, having taken none for Thirty-ſix Hours before: So, having look'd upon his Cloaths, which he perceiv'd were not quite dry, he turn'd the other Side to the Sun, and laid himſelf down to Sleep again; but ſtill nothing but Horror enter'd his Mind: His Soul was continually haraſs'd with the diſmal Apprehenſions the Effects of the late Storm had impreſs'd upon him. He dreamt he was in a terrible Tempeſt, and the Ship he was in daſh'd backwards and forwards thro' the Waves with prodigious Violence, the Clouds pouring down vaſt Streams of liquid Fire, and the raging Ocean all in Flames. In this diſmal Condition he knew not what to do; but, 'ſpying ſome Land, as he thought, at a little Diſtance from the Ship, he was endeavouring to get thither; but, not daring to truſt the Sea, which he imagin'd was like a Caldron of Oil in a Blaze, reſolv'd to try whether he could not jump aſhore: But, juſt as he was going to leap, he ſaw a horrid frtghtful Monſter, with glaring Eyes, and open Mouth, ruſh from the boiling Flames, and make at him, to devour him; which ſcar'd him out of his Sleep.

When he awoke, he was very much terrify'd with his Dream, and ſtar'd about him in a frighted manner, expecting every Minute ſome Creature to devour him: But, taking a little Courage, put on his Cloaths, which by this time were quite dry. He then looks about him; but, alas! could ſee nothing but the dreadful Effects of the late Tempeſt, dead Corpſes, broken Planks, and batter'd Cheſts floating, and ſuch Aſpects which at once filled him with Terror and Grief.

Turning from thoſe ſhocking Objects, which preſented to his Eyes the dreadful Death he ſo lately had eſcap'd, he ſees at the other ſide the Proſpect of one more terrible, Hunger and Thirſt, attended with all the Miſeries that can make Life burdenſome. Being ſeized with the Terror of the threatening Evil, he turns again towards the Sea, and, looking on the dead Corpſes, which the Sea now-and-then drove to the Rock, and back again, Oh! that I was like one of you, ſaid he, paſt all Dangers! I have ſhar'd with you in the Terrors of Death: Why did I not alſo partake with you of its Relief? But why ſhould I complain? and have ſo much Reaſon to be thankful! Had I been cut off, when the Cares of ſaving this worthleſs Carcaſe intercepted me from ſeeking the Salvation of my Soul, I ſhould not have had preſent Opportunity of taking care of it. So, having return'd Thanks for his late Deliverance, he reſigns himſelf to Providence, on whom he fully relies; climbs up the Rock, and, being come to the Top, ſees Land at the Inſide, bearing both Trees and Graſs: Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he: I ſhall not periſh upon theſe barren Rocks: So made a Shift to go down to it, the Weather then being calm.

THE
ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK III.

An Account of QUARLL's *wonderful Shifts, and ſurpriſing Manner of Living; of the miraculous Acts of Providence, and of the ſtrange Events which happened in the Iſland ſince his being there.*

BEING come to the other Side of the Rock, he finds at the Bottom of it a narrow Lake, which ſeparated it from the Land: Therefore pulling off his Cloaths, the Water being but ſhallow, he wades over with them in his Arms; and, dreſſing himſelf, walks up a conſiderable Way in the Iſland, without ſeeing any human Creature, or perceiving any Sign of its being inhabited, which ſtruck a great Damp to his Spirits. He walks it over and over, croſs-ways and long-ways; yet could ſee nothing but Monkeys, ſtrange Beaſts, Birds, and Fowls, ſuch as he had never ſeen before. Having

Having rang'd himſelf weary, he ſat down under a Cluſter of Trees, that made an agreeable Arbour: The Place being pleaſant and cool, made, as it were, for Repoſe, and he being ſtill very much fatigu'd, prompted him to lie down and ſleep; during which, his Mind is continually alarm'd with the frightful Aſpect of grim Death: Sometimes he fanſies himſelf ſtriving with the rolling Waves, ſtretching out his Arms to catch hold of a Plank toſſing by; which, juſt come at, is beaten back by the roaring Billows, whoſe terrible Noiſe pronounces his Death; at other times he thinks himſelf aſtride upon a Piece of a Maſt, labouring to keep himſelf on, and of a ſudden waſh'd away, and ſunk down by a bulky Wave; on every ſide of him Men calling for Help; others ſpent, and paſt ſpeaking; here ſome floating, that are already periſh'd, and there others expiring; thus in every Object ſeeing his approaching Fate.

Being awak'd out of that irkſome and uneaſy Sleep, he falls into as anxious and melancholy Thoughts: I have, ſaid he, eſcap'd being drown'd; but how ſhall I avoid Starving? Here's no Food for Man. But why ſhould I deſpair? Did not *Nebuchadnezzar* live upon Graſs for ſeveral Years, till reſtor'd to his Nation? Cannot I do the ſame for a few Days? by which time, Providence, who has hitherto protected me, may raiſe me ſome means to get from hence. So, being intirely reſign'd, he walks about to ſee the Iſland, which he found ſurrounded with Rocks, at the Bottom of which there was a ſmall Lake, which was fordable in moſt Places, ſo that he could with Eaſe wade over to the Rock; which he did at every Side of the Iſland, to ſee if he could perceive any Ship, whereby he might get away: But, ſeeing none, and it drawing towards Night, he returns, and employs the Remainder of the Day in looking for the moſt convenient Place for him to paſs

away

away the approaching Night; and, having fix'd upon one of the higheſt Trees, he gets up as far as he well could, fearing ſome wild Beaſt might devour him if he ſlept below; where, having return'd Thanks to Heaven for his late great Deliverance, he commits himſelf to its Care; then ſettles, and falls aſleep, and ſlept till Hunger wak'd him in the Morning, having dreamt over-night of abundance of Victuals, which he would fain have come at; but was kept off by a croſs Cook, who bid him go and fiſh for ſome: To which he anſwer'd, That he was ſhipwreck'd, and had nothing to fiſh withal. Well, then, ſaid the Cook to him again, go where thou waſt like to loſe thy Life, and there thou ſhalt find wherewithal to ſupport it.

Being awak'd, he makes Reflections upon his Dream, which tho' he imagin'd it might proceed from the Emptineſs of his Stomach, being cuſtomary for People to dream of Victuals, when they go to Bed hungry, yet at that time it might prove ominous: So, driven by Neceſſity, and led by Curioſity, he went to the ſame Side of the Rock he had been caſt upon; where, having ſtood ſeveral Hours without ſeeing Shipping, or aught that might anſwer his Dream; the Air coming from the Sea being pretty ſharp, and he faint, having taken no manner of Food for near three Days, he gave over all Hopes of Relief. Thus ſubmitting himſelf to the Will of Heaven, which he ſuppos'd decreed a lingering Death to puniſh him for his paſt Sins, he reſolves to return where he lay the Night before, and there wait his Doom; but, being ſtop'd by a ſudden Noiſe which iſſued from a Creek in the Rock, not far from where he ſtood, he had the Curioſity to go and ſee what occaſioned it.

Being

Being come to the Place he heard the Noiſe proceed from, he ſees a fine large Cod-fiſh, near ſix Feet long, dabbling in a Hole in the Rock, where the late Storm had caſt it.

One under Condemnation of Death, and juſt arriv'd at the Place of Execution, could not be more rejoiced at the coming of a Reprieve, than he was at the Sight of this Fiſh, having felt ſeveral ſick Qualms, Forerunners of the Death he thought he was doom'd to. Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he; here's my Dream right: Where Providence reſcu'd my Life from the grim Jaws of Death, there it has provided me wherewithal to ſupport it.

So, having taken off both his Garters, he gets into the Hole where the Fiſh lay; and, having run them through its Gills, he hales it out, and drags it after him, being heavy, and he very weak. Going along, he finds ſeveral Oyſters, Muſſels, and Cockles, in his Way, which the Sea had caſt up and down the Rock; and, having a Knife about him, he ſat down, and eat a few; ſo refreſh'd himſelf, his Spirits being exhauſted for want of Food. This ſmall Nutriment very much recruited his decay'd Strength; and, the Thoughts of his Supply of Proviſion having diſpers'd the dull Ideas his late Want had bred in his Mind, he chearfully takes his Fiſh, which he drags with much more Vigour than before; and, filling his Pockets with Salt that was congeal'd by the Sun, which he found in the Concavities of the Rock, away he goes to the Place where he lay the Night before, in order to dreſs ſome of his Cod-fiſh; where, being come, he picks up a Parcel of dry Leaves, and with his Knife, and a Flint, ſtruck Fire, and kindled them: Then, getting together a few Sticks, made a Fire preſently, and broil'd a Slice of his Fiſh; of which he eat ſo heartily, that it overcame his Stomach, being grown weak with faſting;

faſting: Thus ſick, and out of Order, he applies to the helpleſs Recourſe, which was lying down; and, having much fatigu'd and haraſs'd himſelf with haleing the heavy Fiſh up and down the Rock, he fell aſleep till the next Morning; during which time his Reſt was very much diſturb'd with the frightful Dream of being attack'd by a terrible Monſter, ſuch as never was heard of, either for Bigneſs or Grimneſs; which purſu'd him, till, having run himſelf out of Breath, he was forced to lie expoſ:d to his Fury; but was prevented being devour'd, by a grave old Gentlewoman of a moſt graceful and majeſtic Count-nance, at whoſe ſudden Appearance the Monſter fled. Having recover'd Breath, and Strength to ſpeak, he returns the old Lady Thanks for his Deliverance, and begs Leave to wait on her houſe, that he might know whither to come and pay his conſtant Duty to her, for this her late great Kindneſs: To which ſhe anſwer'd, That ſhe was fix'd in no particular Habitation, but dwelt at every poor Man's Houſe; her Occupation being to aſſiſt the Helpleſs, but not the Slothful and Negligent: That he ſhould ſee her again, before it was long. Meantime, ſhe bid him not go on in evil ways, but, whenever overtaken, not to deſpair; for ſhe was always at hand: Nevertheleſs, ſhe would not have him too depending. And ſo went away, leaving him very eaſy and pleas'd in his Mind, that he had eſcap'd ſuch vaſt Danger.

Having ſlept quietly the Remainder of the Night, he awoke in the Morning pretty freſh and hearty, but very much diſturb'd at his late Dream, which he fear'd preſaged and prognoſticated ſome approaching Evil; but as he could make no comparative Alluſion of the old Lady, who reſcu'd him from the Monſter, he concludes it muſt be an Inſpiration

of

of Providence (whom the grave old Lady did perſonate in his Dream), who lately had preſerv'd him from a Death by all Appearance unavoidable, to keep him from Deſpair in this his great Extremity, promiſing to be at hand upon Occaſion; yet would not have him neglect Means to get away from a Place where Want threatens him. For tho' he might for a while ſubſiſt upon Fiſh, wherewith he may be ſupply'd, being ſurrounded by the Sea; yet he could not imagine which way he could be furniſh'd with Cloaths and Bed againſt the Winter; for want of which he muſt miſerably periſh with Cold, unleſs ſupply'd by ſome ſuch diſmal Accident as expos'd him to the Want thereof, which he heartily wiſhes and prays may never happen.

Having made theſe Conſiderations, he, on his Knees, returns kind Providence his hearty Thanks for all the Mercies that had been extended to him; begging the Continuation of its Aſſiſtance. Then, as he took Direction from his Dream, watching the Opportunity of getting away from that melancholy Place, he goes to the other Side of the Rock, to try if he could perceive any Shipping in Sight.

The Wind, being pretty high, fed his Hopes, that each ſucceeding Hour would gratify his wiſhing Looks, with that Object the preceding could not bring forth; but was diſappointed. The Night approaching, kept back all Probability for that time; however, depending on better Succeſs the next Day, he returns whence he came; and, being hungry, makes a Fire, and broils another Slice of his Fiſh, then lays the reſt upon broad green Leaves, and ſtrews Salt thereon, to keep it from ſpoiling, then goes to Reſt; and as he lay undiſturb'd the Night before, under the Trees, and much more eaſy than a-top, he ventur'd again, committing himſelf to the Care of Provid.nce.

But

But his Thoughts, which all Day had been diſturb'd with the Dread of thoſe Hardſhips he muſt probably undergo, if oblig'd to continue there all Winter, ſo ran in his Mind, that they occaſioned Ideas ſuitable to thoſe he had form'd the Day before; and Cold being the greateſt of his Fears, it is alſo the principal Subject of his Dream; which preſented to his Imagination, that he was in a ſpacious Place, pav'd with Hail-ſtones of a prodigious Bigneſs, and ſurrounded with high Mountains of Ice, which echo'd with Shivers: At the farther End thereof he ſaw an old Man reſembling *Time*, as he is commonly painted, with Heaps of Snow and Hail about him, and himſelf very buſy with making more: At his Side ſtood a very beautiful Woman, whoſe Shape and Make was uncommon, and her Features and Complexion extraordinary; but what ſurpris'd him moſt, was, her having three Pairs of Breaſts, wonderfully handſome, and curiouſly placed, which ſeemed to adorn her Boſom far more than the richeſt Stomacher made of Diamonds or Pearls could do; ſo that what in other Women would look monſtrous, was in her an Addition to her matchleſs Beauty.

The Sight of that moſt perfect and complete Woman warm'd his Blood, which the Coldneſs of the Place had chill'd, and tempted him to come nearer the Charmer. As he advanced, every Step he made, ſeem'd to add Strength to his Limbs, and Vigour to his Life; which made him deſirous to come nearer to the Perſon from whom he receiv'd ſuch beneficial Effluvia; but was ſuddenly ſtop'd by the old Man's turning towards him with a grim and ſurly Countenance, which threatened his nearer Approach with Evil.

Not daring to come nearer, he ſtands ſtill, wondering what Buſineſs that moſt charming Creature could

could have with that ſurly moroſe old Fellow; when, liſtening a while, he perceiv'd ſhe was aſking Boons of him in the Behalf of a vaſt Number of all ſorts of Creatures that attended her at ſome Diſtance behind, which he refus'd in a moſt churliſh manner; and as ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her Suit, following him up and down, the *ill-natur'd* old Man ſlily ſteps to the froſty Mountain, and pulls down a large Clod of Ice, which ſtopt a Gap therein, from whence came out a Creature, made and featur'd like a Man, but of a monſtrous Size, and frightful Aſpect; his exceſſive broad Cheeks hanging down on each Side of his long piked Chin, like two empty Bladders; and his prepoſterous Belly hung down, looking juſt like a Sail without Wind. That Monſter was no ſooner out, but he had Orders from the ſpiteful old Man to drive away the Woman, and all her Attendants; which Word of Command was no ſooner given, but it was put in Execution. Having fill'd his ſhrivell'd Jaws with Wind, which then ſtood out like ſo many Kettle-drums, he falls a blowing upon one of the Hills of Snow, and turns it into a thick Shower, which he drove with Violence againſt that Angel-like Creature, and her Clients, who immediately fled for Shelter.

This barbarous Treatment to the moſt deſerving of Creatures put him in Amaze; to whom the angry old Man (ſeeing he did not go with the reſt) came in a Fury, ſaying, Doſt thou put me to Defiance? I'll bury thee in that which I only ſtrew'd over them; and went to lay hold of him; which cauſed him to awake in a wonderful Fright.

Being riſen, he made Reflections upon his late Dream: All my Dreams, ſaid he, have ever prov'd ominous; and, if I miſtake not, this muſt have ſome Signification: Certainly this old Man is *Time*, laying up a Store of Froſt and Snow againſt next Winter;

Winter; and that goodly Woman is *Nature*, who, being tender over all her Creatures, interceded for Moderation: And his ſurly Refuſal, and rough Uſage, prognoſticate a forward and hard Winter, to whoſe Severity I muſt lie expos'd, being altogether unprovided.

Theſe Reflections bred various melancholy Thoughts, which almoſt led him to Deſpair. Oh! ſaid he, that I was but a Mouſe, Bat, or a yet meaner Creature! Then ſhould I be below the cruel Perſecutions of Fate. But Man, who was created in the nobleſt Form, endu'd with Reaſon and Underſtanding, animated with an immortal Soul, muſt be aim'd at as the only Mark worthy its malignant Darts! But why do I thus rave at thoſe Evils we are the Authors of? Had Man continu'd in his original State of Innocence, the very Name of Fate or Fortune would not have been known. Well, ſince this is the Product of Sin, I accept this black Lot as juſtly coming to my Share; and, humbly ſubmitting to Heaven's Decree, I thankfully take this Dream as a timely Warning; and, in Imitation of thoſe Creatures repreſented in it, I'll provide what Shelter I can, againſt bad Weather comes.

Accordingly, firſt he begins to think of making himſelf an Houſe to preſerve him from the Injuries of the Weather; but, having nothing to make it of, nor any Inſtrument but a Knife, which could be of little Service to him, he reſolves to go to that Part of the Rocks where he was ſhipwreck'd, to ſee if he could diſcover any thing among the Wreck that might be ſerviceable to him; and therefore takes a Branch of a Tree along with him, and, coming to the Place, he ſtrips himſelf, and goes into the Water (the Water, being low, diſcovering the Tops of ſeveral ſharp-pointed Rocks), and gropes along with his Staff for ſure Footing, wading as high

as

as his Chin, diving to the Bottom frequently, and feeling about with his Hands. This he continu'd doing for almoſt two Hours, but to no purpoſe, not daring to go out of his Depth; for he well knew, that he could do little Good there, becauſe he could diſcover no Part of the Ship, not ſo much as the Maſt, or any of the Rigging, but fanſy'd ſhe lay in ſome deep Hole, where it was impoſſible to get at her.

Thus deſpairing, and fretting and teizing himſelf, he calls to mind, that he had a Hatchet in his Hand when he was caſt away, and thought probably it might lie in that Clift of the Rock, into which he was thrown; whither he went, and, looking about, perceiv'd ſomething like the Handle of a Hatchet juſt above the Surface of the Water at the Bottom of the Rock; and, going down to it, took it up; which, to his great Joy, prov'd to be the very Thing he wanted.

Having got his Tool, he dreſſes himſelf, and goes on to the Iſland again, intending to cut down ſome Trees to make himſelf a Hut: Looking about, therefore, for the propereſt Plants, and taking notice of a ſort of Trees, whoſe Branches, bending to the Ground, took Root, and became a Plant, he thought they might be the fitteſt for his Purpoſe, and cut a ſufficient Parcel of them to make his Barrack; which was full Buſineſs for him that Day.

The next Morning, having paid his uſual Devotion, he walks out again to look a pleaſant and convenient Place to make his Hut or Barrack upon: He walk'd ſeveral Hours, and could find none more ſhelter'd from the cold Winds, than that where he already lay, being in the Middle of the Iſland, well fenced on the North and Eaſt Sides with Trees, which ſtood very thick: The Place being fixed upon,

upon, he hews down ſome Trees that grew in his Way, and clears a Spot of Ground about twelve Feet ſquare, leaving one Tree ſtanding at each Corner; and, with the young Plants he provided the Day before, fill'd the Diſtance between, quite round, ſetting them about ſix Inches aſunder, leaving a larger Vacancy for the Door: His Incloſure being made, he bends the Branches a-top from both Sides, and weaves them croſs one another, making a Cover to it; which being ſomething too thin, he laid other Branches over, till they were grown thicker: Having finiſh'd the Top, he goes about cloſing the Sides; for which Purpoſe, taking large Branches, he ſtrips off their ſmall Twigs, and weaves them between the Plants as they do for Sheep-pens; then makes a Door after the ſame manner.

His Barrack being finiſh'd, which took him up fifteen Days hard Work; Now, ſaid he, here's a Houſe; but where's the Furniture? This, indeed, may keep the Weather from me, but not the Cold. The Ground on which I do and muſt lie, is hard, and doubtleſs, in the Winter, will grow damp; which, with want of Covering, may occaſion Agues and Fevers, the Colick and Rheumatiſm, and twenty racking Diſtempers, which may cauſe me to repent my having eſcap'd a milder Death.

In this great Conſternation and Perplexity, he goes to ſee if he could ſpy any Shipping riding within Sight of the Iſland: As he was walking along, full of heavy and dull Thoughts, which weigh'd his Looks to the Ground, he happened to find a ſort of high Graſs that grows but here-and-there, round ſome particular ſort of Trees, of which he never took notice before. Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he, I have found wherewithal to keep my poor Body from the Ground, whilſt I am, by Providence, doom'd to remain here: So paſſes on, intending

at

at his Return, to cut down a ſufficient Quantity of it to make Mats that might ſerve him inſtead of Bed and Bed-cloaths.

Having look'd himſelf almoſt blind, without ſeeing the leaſt Proſpect of what he deſir'd, he concludes upon going to cut the Graſs which he ſtood in ſuch Want of, and ſpread it to dry, whilſt the Weather was yet warm: That Piece of Work kept him employ'd the Remainder of the Day, and beſt Part of the ſucceeding, having nothing but a Pocket-knife to cut withal. That Work being done, wanting a Tool to ſpread and turn his Graſs, he takes a Branch off the next Tree, which having ſtript of all the ſmall ones about it, all but Part of that at the Top, being forky, made a tolerable Fork: Thus, being equipp'd for Hay-making, he went on with his Work; and, as he was at it, he ſaw, at ſome Diſtance, ſeveral Monkeys, as buſy as himſelf, ſcratching ſomething out of the Ground, which they did eat upon the Spot, and carry'd the reſt to their Home.

His Hopes that thoſe Roots might be for his Uſe, thoſe Creatures being naturally dainty, eating nothing but what Men may, made him haſten to the Place he ſaw them ſcratching at, that by the Herb they bear (which they tore off) he might find out the Root.

Having, by the Leaves, which he pick'd off the Ground, found ſome of the ſame, he digs 'em up, and carry'd them to his Barrack, where he broil'd a Slice of his Fiſh, and in the Aſhes roaſted them, which eat ſomething like Cheſtnuts done in the ſame manner.

This new-found-out Eatable much rejoicing him, he return'd his hearty Thanks to kind Providence, that had put him in a way to provide himſelf with Bread, and that of the moſt delicious kind. As

ſoon

ſoon therefore as he had dined, he went out on purpoſe to dig up a good Quantity; but, as he was going to the Place where he had taken notice they grew pretty thick, he ſees a Tortoiſe, of about a Foot over, crawling before him: Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he, here's what will ſupply me both with Victuals, and Utenſils to dreſs it in: He ran therefore, and turned it on its Back to keep it from getting away, whilſt he went for his Hatchet, that he might cut the Bottom-ſhell from the Top, in order to make a Kettle of the deepeſt, and a Diſh of the flat Part.

Being tired of Cod-fiſh, he dreſſes the Tortoiſe, an Animal ſeldom eaten but upon Extremity, the Fleſh thereof often giving the Flux: Nevertheleſs he ventur'd upon it, and liked it extremely, ſome Part of it eating very much like Veal; which at that time was a very great Novelty to him, having eaten no freſh Meat for a long while before.

Happening to eat of that Part of the Tortoiſe which is the moſt feeding, and leſs hurtful, he was in no-wiſe diſcompoſed; but, having boil'd it all, he laid by the Remainder to eat now-and then between his Fiſh.

Being provided with a boiling Utenſil, he often had Change, by means of thoſe admirable Roots, ſo luckily diſcovered; ſome of which he roaſted for Bread, others he boiled with Salt-cod: This in a great meaſure mitigated his Misfortune, and ſoften'd the Hardſhip he lay under; ſo that, ſeeing but little Proſpect of changing his preſent Condition by getting away from thence yet-a-while, he thinks on Means to make it as eaſy as poſſible whilſt he remained in it; for, having projected a Bed, and taking the Graſs, which by that time was dry, he falls to Work; and a Mat being the thing concluded upon, he twiſts his Hay into Ropes, the Bigneſs of

his Leg; then he cuts a pretty Number of Sticks, about two Feet long, which he drives in the Ground ten in a Row, and near four Inches aſunder, and oppoſite to them ſuch another Row at ſix or ſeven Feet Diſtance from the firſt, which made the Length of his Mat; then, having faſtened one End of his Rope at one of the corner Sticks, he brings it round the other corner Stick, and ſo to the next at the other End, till he had laid his Frame: Then he weaves acroſs ſhorter Ropes of the ſame, in the manner they make Pallions on board with old Cable-ends. When he had finiſh'd his Mat, he beat it with a long Stick, which made it ſwell up; and, the Graſs being of a ſoft cottony Nature, he had a warm and eaſy Bed to lie on.

The Comfort and Pleaſure he found on his ſoft Mat (being grown ſore with lying on the Ground for the Space of a Month and more) ſo liberally gratified him for the Time and Labour he had beſtow'd in making it, that it gave him Encouragement to go about another; a Covering being the next Neceſſary wanted: For tho' the Weather was, as yet, pretty warm, and he, in a great meaſure, ſeaſon'd by the Hardſhip he had gone through; yet the Winter approaching, and the preſent Seaſon ſtill favourable for him to make Proviſion againſt it, he goes and cuts more Graſs; which being made ready for Uſe, he lengthens his Loom, to allow for rolling up at one End, inſtead of a Bolſter, and makes it thicker than the firſt; which he intends, in cold Weather, ſhall lie upon him inſtead of Blankets.

Being provided with the moſt neceſſary Furniture he wanted, he thinks on more Conveniencies, reſolving to make himſelf a Table to eat his Victuals upon, and a Chair to ſit on: Thus, having cut ſeveral Sticks about four Feet long, he drives them in

in a Row a little Way in the Ground; then takes ſmaller, which he interweaves between: Having made the Top, he ſets it upon four other Sticks, forky at the upper End, which he ſtruck in the Ground, at one ſide of his Barrack, to the Height of a Table; this being done, he cuts four more Branches, ſuch as he judg'd would do beſt for the Seat and Back of a Chair, which he alſo drove in the Ground near his Table; and, having twiſted the Branches, which grew to them, with each other, from Back to Front, and acroſs again, he weaves ſmaller between, bottoming his Seat; which completes the Furniture of his Habitation.

That Care being over, another ſucceeds, of a far greater Moment: Here's a Dwelling, ſaid he, to ſhelter me from the Weather, and a Bed to reſt this poor Body of mine; but where is Food to ſupport it? Here have I ſubſiſted near one Month upon a Fiſh, which the ſame dreadful Storm, that took away forty Lives, ſent me to maintain my own. Well, ſince kind Providence has been pleas'd to preſerve my Life preferably to ſo many, who fatally periſh'd in that diſmal Accident, I am bound, in Gratitude, to hold it precious; and ſince my Fiſh is almoſt gone, and I am not certain of more, I muſt by Degrees bring myſelf to live upon Roots, which I hope will never be wanting, being the natural Product of this Iſland: So I muſt eat of the ſmall Remnant of my Fiſh but now-and-then, to make it hold out longer. Dainties or Plenty were not allotted for him that was doom'd to Slavery, but Labour, and hard Living; and, if I meet here the latter, Heaven be prais'd! I have eſcap'd the worſe: I can take my Reſt, and ſtand in no Dread of any ſevere Inſpector and Taſkmaſter.

Now being intirely reconcil'd to the State of Life Providence, on whom he fully depended, had been

pleas'd to call him to, he reſolves to make Proviſion of thoſe excellent Roots; and with his Hatchet he cuts a Piece of a Tree, wherewith he makes a Shovel, in order to dig them up with more Eaſe: With this Inſtrument he went to the Place where he had obſerved they grew thickeſt, which being near the Monkeys Quarters, they came down from off their Trees in great Numbers, grinning as if they would have flown at him; which made him ſtop awhile: He might indeed, with the Inſtrument in his Hand, have killed ſeveral, and perhaps diſpers'd the reſt; but would not: Why, ſaid he, ſhould I add Barbarity to Injuſtice? It is but natural and reaſonable for every Creature to guard and defend their own: This was given them by Nature for Food, which I come to rob them of; and ſince I am obliged to eat of them for my Subſiſtence, if I am decreed to be here another Seaſon, I will ſet ſome in a Place diſtant from theirs for my own Uſe.

Having ſtood ſtill a conſiderable time, thoſe Animals, ſeeing he did not go forwards, each went and ſcratched up for itſelf, afterwards retiring; giving him the Opportunity to dig up a few for himſelf: And as he was not come to the Place where they grew thick, he laid them in ſmall Heaps as he dug them up; while thoſe fly Creatures would, whilſt he was digging up more, come down from the Trees, where they ſtood hid amongſt the Leaves, and ſteal them away: Which obliged him to be contented for that time with as many as his Pockets would hold, reſolving to bring ſomething next time which would contain a larger Quantity; and, fearing thoſe Animals, which are naturally very cunning, ſhould dig them up, and hide them, he comes early the Morning following to make his Proviſion: And, for want of a Sack to put them in, he takes his Jacket,

Jacket, which he buttons up, and ties at the Sleeves; and as he had obſerved, that every Root had abundance of little Off-ſets hanging at it by ſmall Fibres, he pull'd off his Shirt alſo, of which he makes another Sack to put them in.

Being naked, all but his Breeches, and the Day being pretty hot, he thought he had as good pull them off too, and fill them, his Jacket being but ſhort, and therefore holding but few: Taking, therefore, his Bundle in one Arm, and having the Shovel in the other Hand, he goes to the Place he intended to do the Day before; and, expecting to find the ſame Oppoſition as he did then, he brought with him ſome of the Roots he had dug up the preceding Day, in order to throw them amongſt thoſe Animals, and ſo quiet them: But, to his great Wonder, and as great Satisfaction, thoſe Creatures, which the time before had oppoſed him with Noiſe, and offenſive Motions, let him now paſs by quietly, without offering to meddle with any when dug up, tho' he laid them up by Heaps in their Way, and ſtood at a conſiderable Diſtance from them.

This ſurpriſing Reverence from thoſe Creatures ſet him upon deep Reflections on what could be the Cauſe thereof; whether it might not proceed from the Proximity of their Shape and his: But, then, ſaid he, my Stature and Colour of Skin is ſo different from theirs, that they cannot but diſtinguiſh I am not of their Kind: No, it muſt be a Remnant of that Awe, entail'd by Nature upon all Animals, to that moſt noble and complete Maſterpiece of the Creation, call'd *Man*, which, now appearing in the State he was firſt created in, and undiſguis'd by Cloaths, renews an Image of that Reſpect he has forfeited by his fatal Tranſgreſſion, which ever ſince obliged him to hide the Beauty of his Fabric under a gaudy Diſguiſe, which often renders him ridiculous

lous to the reſt of Mankind, and generally obnoxious to all other Creatures; making a Pride of what he ought to be aſham'd of: Well, adds he, ſince my Cloaths bred the Antipathy, I will remove that Cauſe, which will ſuit both the Nature of thoſe Animals, and my own Circumſtances. From that time he reſolves to go naked, till the Hardneſs of the Weather oblig'd him to put ſomething on.

Having pick'd up a ſufficient Quantity of Off-ſets to ſtock about two Acres of Land, he returns home, leaving behind him a conſiderable Number of Roots dug up for thoſe poor Animals, which attended him all the time he was at work, without offering to touch one till he was gone.

Being come home, he fixes upon a Spot of Ground near his Habitation, and digs it up as well as he could with his wooden Inſtrument, in order to ſow his Seed; which having compaſs'd in about twenty Days, he implores a Bleſſing upon his Labour, and leaves it to Time to bring forth. Thus having finiſhed the moſt neceſſary Work about his Barrack, he reſolves to take a more particular View of the Iſland, which till then he had not time to do; and, taking a long Staff in his Hand, he walks to the Lake, which parts the Land from the Rock, and goes along the Side of it quite round the Iſland, finding all the Way new Subjects of Admiration: On the Left-hand ſtood a Rampart made of one ſolid Stone, adorn'd by Nature with various Forms and Shapes, beyond the Power of Art to imitate; ſome Parts challenging a Likeneſs to a City, and Cluſters of Houſes, with here-and-there an high Steeple ſtanding above the other Buildings; another Place claiming a near Reſemblance to a diſtant Squadron of Men of War in a Line of Battle: Further, it bears Compariſon with the dull Remains of ſome ſumptuous Edifice, ruin'd by the often-

repeated

repeated Shocks of Time, inciting the Beholders to Condolence for the Loſs of its former Beauty. At ſome Diſtance from thence the Proſpect of a demoliſh'd City is preſented to the Sight; in another Place large Stones like ſmall Mountains, laid, as it were, a-top of one another, impreſs the Mind with an Idea of the Tower of *Babel*; and on the Right-hand a moſt pleaſant Land cover'd with beautiful green Graſs, like Chamomile, and here-and-there a Cluſter of Trees, compoſing moſt agreeable Groves, amongſt a vaſt Number of fine loſty Trees of divers Heights and Shapes, which ſtood more diſtant, whoſe Irregularity added much to the Delightfulneſs of the Place.

As he was walking on, admiring all theſe wonderful Works of Nature, having caught Cold (not being uſed to go naked), he happen'd to ſneeze oppoſite to a Place in the Rock, which hollow'd-in after the Manner of the Inſide of ſome Cathedral, and was anſwer'd by a Multitude of different Voices iſſuing from that Place: The Agreeableneſs of the Surprize induc'd him to rouze thoſe Echoes a ſecond time, by giving a loud Hem; which was, like his Sneezing, repeated in different Tones, but all very harmonious: Again he hemm'd, and was ſo delighted with the Repetition, that he could have ſpent Hours in the hearing of it: But why ſhould I, ſaid he, waſte thoſe melodious Sounds, ſo fit to relate the Almighty's wonderful Works, and ſet forth his Praiſe? Immediately he ſung ſeveral Pſalms and Hymns, with as much Emulation and Devotion, as if he had been in Company with Numbers of ſkilful and celebrated Choriſters.

Having ſpent a conſiderable Time there with much Pleaſure, he proceeds in his Walk, being reſolv'd to make that his Place of Worſhip for the future, and attend it twice a Day conſtantly.

lous to the reſt of Mankind, and generally obnoxious to all other Creatures; making a Pride of what he ought to be aſham'd of: Well, adds he, ſince my Cloaths bred the Antipathy, I will remove that Cauſe, which will ſuit both the Nature of thoſe Animals, and my own Circumſtances. From that time he reſolves to go naked, till the Hardneſs of the Weather oblig'd him to put ſomething on.

Having pick'd up a ſufficient Quantity of Off-ſets to ſtock about two Acres of Land, he returns home, leaving behind him a conſiderable Number of Roots dug up for thoſe poor Animals, which attended him all the time he was at work, without offering to touch one till he was gone.

Being come home, he fixes upon a Spot of Ground near his Habitation, and digs it up as well as he could with his wooden Inſtrument, in order to ſow his Seed; which having compaſs'd in about twenty Days, he implores a Bleſſing upon his Labour, and leaves it to Time to bring forth. Thus having finiſhed the moſt neceſſary Work about his Barrack, he reſolves to take a more particular View of the Iſland, which till then he had not time to do; and, taking a long Staff in his Hand, he walks to the Lake, which parts the Land from the Rock, and goes along the Side of it quite round the Iſland, finding all the Way new Subjects of Admiration: On the Left-hand ſtood a Rampart made of one ſolid Stone, adorn'd by Nature with various Forms and Shapes, beyond the Power of Art to imitate; ſome Parts challenging a Likeneſs to a City, and Cluſters of Houſes, with here-and-there an high Steeple ſtanding above the other Buildings; another Place claiming a near Reſemblance to a diſtant Squadron of Men of War in a Line of Battle: Further, it bears Compariſon with the dull Remains of ſome ſumptuous Edifice, ruin'd by the often-

repeated

repeated Shocks of Time, inciting the Beholders to Condolence for the Loſs of its former Beauty. At ſome Diſtance from thence the Proſpect of a demoliſh'd City is preſented to the Sight; in another Place large Stones like ſmall Mountains, laid, as it were, a-top of one another, impreſs the Mind with an Idea of the Tower of *Babel*; and on the Right-hand a moſt pleaſant Land cover'd with beautiful green Graſs, like Chamomile, and here-and-there a Cluſter of Trees, compoſing moſt agreeable Groves, amongſt a vaſt Number of fine loſty Trees of divers Heights and Shapes, which ſtood more diſtant, whoſe Irregularity added much to the Delightfulneſs of the Place.

As he was walking on, admiring all theſe wonderful Works of Nature, having caught Cold (not being uſed to go naked), he happen'd to ſneeze oppoſite to a Place in the Rock, which hollow'd-in after the Manner of the Inſide of ſome Cathedral, and was anſwer'd by a Multitude of different Voices iſſuing from that Place: The Agreeableneſs of the Surprize induc'd him to rouze thoſe Echoes a ſecond time, by giving a loud Hem; which was, like his Sneezing, repeated in different Tones, but all very harmonious: Again he hemm'd, and was ſo delighted with the Repetition, that he could have ſpent Hours in the hearing of it: But why ſhould I, ſaid he, waſte thoſe melodious Sounds, ſo fit to relate the Almighty's wonderful Works, and ſet forth his Praiſe? Immediately he ſung ſeveral Pſalms and Hymns, with as much Emulation and Devotion, as if he had been in Company with Numbers of ſkilful and celebrated Choriſters.

Having ſpent a conſiderable Time there with much Pleaſure, he proceeds in his Walk, being reſolv'd to make that his Place of Worſhip for the future, and attend it twice a Day conſtantly.

About three or four hundred Paces farther, having turned on the other Side of a jetting-out Part of the Rock, he was ſtopt a ſecond time by another ſurpriſing Product of Nature; a large Stone, growing out of the Rock, advancing quite over the Lake at the Bottom of it, repreſenting ſomething of an human Shape; out of the Breaſt whereof iſſued a Fountain of exceeding clear Water, as ſweet as Milk; and, when looked at fronting, was like an antique Piece of Architecture, which in old Times they built over particular Springs; and on the other Side appeared as if ſpringing from the Noſtrils of a Sea-horſe: Theſe three ſo very different, and yet rightly compared Likeneſſes, being offered by one and the ſame unaltered Object, made him curious to examine what Parts of every Reſemblance helped to make out the others: And, having ſpent a conſiderable Time in the Examination, he found every thing, which the Front had Likeneſs of, was employed in making the Side-repreſentation, by being in ſome Places ſhorten'd, and others lengthen'd, according to the Point of Sight.

Being ſatisfied about that Subject, he enters upon another as puzzling: The Baſon, in which the Fountain ran, which was about five Yards diſtant from whence the Water did ſpring, being but about nine Feet over every Way, without any viſible Place to evacuate its Over-complement, and yet keeping the ſame Height, without daſhing or running over, altho' the Stream that fell into it ran as big as his Wriſt. Having a long time ſearch'd into the Cauſe, without any Satisfaction, he conjectures it muſt make its Way out ſomewhere under-ground; ſo went on, till he came to the Place he had begun his March at, which ended that Day's Work.

Having

Having been round the Iſland, which, to the beſt of his Judgment, was about ten or eleven Miles in Circumference, of an oblong Form, going in and out in ſeveral Places, extending from North to South, the South End near twice as broad as the oppoſite; he reſolves to employ the next Day in viewing the Inſide. Then recommending himſelf to Providence, as he never fail'd to do, both Morning and Evening, he goes to Bed; but not being ſleepy, the over-active Faculty in Man roves from one Subject to another: His Mind runs from his preſent Station to his former, reaſſuming his paſt Pleaſures, which he never muſt hope to meet with again, and calls in all the Evils his preſent Condition of Life lays him expoſed to. Theſe dull Thoughts quite diſlodge his late-born Hopes of Heaven's Aſſiſtance, and ſhake his future Dependence on Providence: He ſnarls and quarrels with his Fate, and repines at his Condition; which not being in his Power to mend, he wiſhes for eternal Sleep, to free his Mind of Tumults and Cares, which croud upon him.

Sleep was granted him, but not Reſt: His Repining is chaſtiſed with terrifying Dreams of the Puniſhment he had been condemned to; all his paſt Troubles come upon him, in the moſt grievous and ſhocking manner they could appear; his raging Wives at once fall upon him, exerting their utmoſt Malice and Revenge, which he cannot avoid, but by embracing either an ignominious Death, or a ſevere and vile Bondage: Thoſe terrible Aſpects put him in the ſame Pains and Agony, as if already feeling the aſſign'd Torment.

Having in his Dream, with hard Strugglings, eſcap'd Death, he finds himſelf in an exceeding hot Country, his half-naked Body continually bending to the hard and dry Ground, grabbling round a nauſeous Weed for fulſome Worms; every now-and-

then laſh'd by a croſs and ſevere Taſkmaſter, who hurries him to Work: In this great Perplexity he cries out, Oh, that I had ended my woful Days at the ſhameful Gibbet! Sure it would have been a milder Fate! At which he awak'd, in ſuch a Conſternation, that it was ſeveral Minutes before he could be thoroughly ſatisfy'd it was but a Dream. Having recall'd his diſpers'd Senſes, he made this Reflection; That it really was the Penalty he had been ſentenced to, and by Providence preſerv'd from. Setting then his preſent Condition in Oppoſition to that, he acknowleges his Ingratitude, for which he ſorely repents, and on his Knees, with weeping Eyes, aſks Pardon, imploring the Continuation of Providence's Protection; reſolving, for the future, never to think or wiſh to change that State of Life it had pleaſed Heaven to place him in; wholly dedicating the Remains of his Days to God's Worſhip: Holding henceforth, as ineſtimable, the Happineſs of being freed from thoſe Cares which daily flew on them who are concern'd with the World, which might cool or ſlacken his Duty to ſo great a Benefactor.

Having intirely reſign'd himſelf to the Will of God, he caſts off all Cares, and baniſhes from his Mind all that could create any; reſolving to employ thoſe Hours, that ran between the Intervals of Time he had dedicated to Divine Worſhip, in the Contemplation of the many wonderful Works of Nature, manifeſted in ſuch various manners all over the Iſland.

So he walks along the Land, which he found very level, cover'd with a delightful green Graſs, and adorn'd with Trees of divers Sorts, Shapes, and Height, inhabited with ſeveral ſorts of curious ſinging Birds, of various Colours and Notes, which entertain'd him with their melodious Harmony: In

ſome

ſome Places ſtood a Cluſter of Trees, compoſing agreeable and delightful Groves, proceeding from only one main Body, whoſe lower Branches, being come to a certain Length, apply'd to the Earth for immediate Nouriſhment, as it were, to eaſe the old Stem that produced them; and ſo became a Plant, and did the ſame.

Having for ſome time admir'd the Agreeableneſs and Curioſity of the Plant, by which Nature ſeem'd to give human Kind Inſtructions; and looking about, if perchance he could find any-thing in his way for his own proper Uſe; he took along with him a Sample of every different Herb he thought might be eatable. Croſſing the Iſland in ſeveral Places, he comes at a moſt delightful Pond, about two hundred Yards in Length, and one hundred and fifty wide, with fine Trees ſpreading their branchy Limbs over its Brink, which was ſurrounded with a beautiful Bank, cover'd with divers kinds of Flowers and Herbs, ſo naturally intermix'd, which completed it in Ornament and Conveniency, as tho' intended by Nature for more than Mortals Uſe.

Having walk'd ſeveral times around it, with much Pleaſure, he ſat down a while upon its Bank, to admire the Clearneſs of the Water, thro' which, to his great Comfort, he ſaw many different Sorts of fine Fiſh, of various Bigneſſes, Shapes, and Colours. Heaven be praiſed! ſaid he, here is a Stock of freſh-water Fiſh to ſupply me with Food, if the Sea ſhould fail me.

Being ſufficiently diverted with their chaſing one another, which were of many beautiful and different Colours, and made a moſt delightful Scene, he proceeds in his Walk, and goes to the South of the Iſland, where he finds another Subject of Admiration; a noble and ſpacious Wood, whoſe

Shades ſeem'd to be made for the Abode of Peace and Pleaſure: He walked round it with much Delight, which made the Time ſeem ſhort; yet he could gueſs it to be no leſs than two Miles about.

Having view'd the Outſide, whoſe extraordinary Agreeableneſs incited in him an unſurmountable Deſire to get into it, but where he was afraid to venture, leſt there might be deſtructive Creatures; yet, having recommended himſelf to the Care of Providence, he ventur'd into it, finding ſeveral pleaſant Walks, ſome ſtrait, edg'd with lofty Trees, as tho' planted for Pleaſure; others crooked and winding, border'd with a thick Hedge of Pimentoes, which caſt a moſt fragrant Smell: Here-and-there a large Cluſter of Buſhes and Dwarf-trees, wherein ſhelter'd ſeveral different Kinds of Wild Beaſts and Fowls. Sure, ſaid he, this Iſland never was intended by Nature to lie waſte, but rather reſerv'd to be the happy Abode of ſome, for whom Heaven had a particular Bleſſing in ſtore: Here is every thing ſufficient, not only for the Support, but alſo for the Pleaſure, of Life; Heaven make me thankful, that I am the happy Inhabitant of ſo bleſſed a Land!

Being hungry, and tir'd with walking, he goes home, in order to get ſome Victuals; and, having made a Fire, he boils a Slice of his Salt-fiſh with ſome Roots, and then the Herbs he brought with him, which prov'd of divers Taſtes, and all excellent; ſome eating like Artichokes, others like Aſparagus and Spinach. Now, ſaid he, what can I wiſh for more? Here I poſſeſs a plentiful Land, which produces both Fowls, Fleſh, and Fiſh; bears excellent Greens and Roots, and affords the beſt of Water, which by Nature was ordain'd for Man's Drink. Pomp and Greatneſs are but Pageantry, which oftentimes prove more prejudicial to the Actor,

Actor, than diverting to the Beholder: Eaſe and Indulgence are apt to breed the Gout, and various Diſtempers, which make the Rich more wretched than the Poor; now theſe Evils, Thanks to my Maker, I ſtand in no Danger of, having but what is ſufficient, which never can do any Harm.

Thus thoroughly eaſy in his Mind, he propoſes to ſpend the Afternoon at the Outſide of the Rock, in viewing the Sea, and looking for Oyſters; ſo takes in his Hand his long Staff to grabble in Holes; and his Breeches, which he ties at the Knees, to bring them in. Being come to a Place of the Rock he never had been at before, he ſees, at a Diſtance, ſomething like Linen hanging upon it; which, when come at, he found to be the Main-ſail of a Ship, with a Piece of the Yard faſten'd to it: Alas! ſaid he, a diſmal Token of inſatiable Ambition! which makes Men often loſe their Lives, in ſeeking what they ſeldom find; and, if they ever do, 'tis commonly attended with a World of Care. Happy is he who limits his Deſires to his Ability; aſpiring not above his Reach, and is contented with what Nature requires. Then he falls a ripping the Sheet from the Yard, which he finds in one Place ty'd with one of his Garters (having himſelf made uſe of it for want of another String): Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he, this is no Effect of another Shipwreck, but a Fragment of the unfortunate Ship, whoſe Loſs was my Redemption; which Reflection made him ſhed Tears.

Having ripp'd the Sail in Pieces, he rolls them up in ſuch Bundles as he could conveniently carry, and lays them down till he had got a few Oyſters, proceeding to grope in Holes with his Stick as he went on.

About forty Paces farther, he finds a Cheſt in a Cliſt of the Rock, which had been waſh'd up there by

by the Violence of the late Storm: Heaven! ſaid he, more fatal Effects of Fate's Cruelty, and Man's Temerity! Was the Sea made for Man to travel on? Is there not Land enough for his rambling Mind to rove? Muſt he hunt after Dangers, and put Death to Defiance? What is the Owner of this the better for it now? Or who can be the better in a Place ſo remote, and the Acceſs to it ſo difficult? being not to be approach'd, but on the Wings of Providence, and over the Back of Death. Now, was this full of maſſy Gold, or yet richer Things, I thank my God, I am above the Uſe of it; yet I'll take it home: It was ſent hither by Providence, perhaps for the Relief of ſome ſo neceſſitated and deſtitute. Then going to lift it, he could not; therefore was oblig'd to fetch his Hatchet to beat it open, that he might take away what was in it by Degrees: Having taken as much of the Sail-cloth as he could conveniently carry, with the few Oyſters he had got, he went home, and fetch'd the Tool, wherewith he wrench'd the Cheſt open, from which he took a Suit of Cloaths, and ſome Wearing-linen: Theſe, ſaid he, neither the Owner, nor I, want; ſo laid them down: The next Thing he took out, was a Roll of ſeveral Sheets of Parchment, being Blank Indentures and Leaſes; Theſe, ſaid he, are Inſtruments of the Law, and often apply'd to Injuſtice; but I'll alter their miſchievous Properties, and make them Records of Heaven's Mercies, and Providence's wonderful Liberality to me; ſo, inſtead of being the Ruin of ſome, they may chance to be the Reclaiming of others. At the Bottom of the Cheſt lay a Rundlet of Brandy, a *Cheſhire* Cheeſe, a Leather Bottle full of Ink, with a Parcel of Pens, and a Penknife: As for theſe, ſaid he, they are of Uſe; the Pens, Ink, and Parchment, have equipp'd me to keep a Journal, which will divert and paſs away a few anxious

anxious Hours; as for the Cheeſe and Brandy, they will but cauſe me new Cares: Before I had 'em, I wanted 'em not; now, the Benefit and Comfort I ſhall find in them, when gone, will make me hanker after them moſt; I wiſh I had ſtill been without 'em: But now they are here, it would be a Sin to let 'em be loſt. I'll take them home, and only uſe them at my Need; which will both make them hold out the longer, and me grow leſs fond of them.

So, by Degrees, he takes home the Cheſt, and what was in it; and, now having Materials to begin his Journal, he immediately fell to Work, that, for want of other Books, he might, at his Leiſure, peruſe his paſt Tranſactions, and the many Mercies he had receiv'd from Heaven; and that, after his Deceaſe, whoever is directed thither by Providence, upon reading his wonderful Eſcapes in the greateſt of Dangers; his miraculous Living, when remote from human Aſſiſtance; in the like Extremity, might not deſpair. Thus he begins from his being eight Years old (as well as he can remember, he heard an old Aunt of his ſay) to the Day of his being caſt away, which happen'd on the 10th of *July* 1675. being then Twenty-eight Years of Age, reſolving to continue it to his Death.

Thus having written the preceding Account of his Shipwreck, and what had befallen him ſince, to the finding of the Cheſt, which was on the 15th of *September* 1675. he proceeds: But, calling to mind his laſt Dream but one, which did warn him to make Proviſion againſt Winter, and the Seaſon being pretty far advanced, he gathers a good Store of Fuel and Roots; begins to line the Outſide of his Barrack with a Wall of Turf, and lays the ſame atop, to keep out the Wet: And as he now-and-then found ſmall Shell-fiſh and Oyſters upon the Rock, he

he makes a Bridge over the Lake, which in warm Weather he uſed to wade, that in the Winter he might go over dry: So, having completed his Bridge, which was made of two ſtrong Poles, which reach'd from the Land to the Rock, and ſeveral leſſer Branches laid acroſs, pretty cloſe, he retires home, the Day being far ſpent: The following Night, being the 18th of *September*, there aroſe a violent Storm, attended with dreadful Claps of Thunder, which the many Echoes from the Rock rendered more terrible; and Lightnings flaſhing in a moſt frightful manner, ſucceeding each other, before the preceding was well out of the Sky, which put poor loneſome *Quarll* in ſuch a Conſternation, that (notwithſtanding his Reliance on Heaven's Protection) he would have given the World (had it been in his Poſſeſſion) to have been within the Reach of human Aſſiſtance; or, at leaſt, to have ſome Company; Solitude adding much to his Terror and Affliction.

The glorious Riſing of the next Morning's Sun having laid the mortifying Rage of the bluſtering Winds, *Quarll*, whoſe late Alarm was hardly quell'd, ſtill ſuſpected its moſt reviving Rays to be terrifying Glances and Flaſhings of Lightning; but, having lain a while, and hearing no Noiſe, but that which ſtill raged in his Mind, was at laſt convinced the Storm was over; and ſo gets up, with a Reſolution to go and ſee if he could diſcern any Effects of the late Tempeſt.

Being come at the other Side of the Rock, he ſaw, indeed, ſurpriſing Objects, but not afflicting; the Miſchief that was done, being to the Inhabitants of the Sea only, a vaſt Number of which had, by the Wind, been diſ-elemented; a Quantity of ſtately Whitings, fine Mackerels, large Herrings, divers Sizes of Codlings, and ſeveral other Sorts of Fiſh, with

with a great Number of Shells, of different Shapes and Bigneſſes, lying up and down upon the Rock. Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he, inſtead of Damage to bewail, what Thanks have I now to return for this mighty Benefit! Here the powerful Agent of Miſchief is, by kind Providence, made a Miniſter of Good to me: Make me thankful! I am now provided for all the next Winter, and yet longer; by which time I'm certain to have a freſh Supply.

† *He who, when in Diſtreſs,*
To GOD makes his Addreſs,
And his Bounties implore;
Is ſure, and may depend,
That Relief he will ſend,
And at Need help the Poor.

Thus having taken up as many Fiſh as he could hold in his Arms, he carries 'em home, and brings his Shirt, which he us'd inſtead of a Sack: So, at ſeveral times, he brought away all the Fiſh, and as many of the Shells as he had Occaſion for; of ſome of which he made Boilers and Stew-pans, of others Diſhes and Plates: Some he kept Water in, and others Fiſh in Pickle; ſo that he was ſtock'd with neceſſary Veſſels, as well as Proviſions.

Being very weary with often going backwards and forwards for his Fiſh, which took up all that Day to bring 'em home, he ſits down to reſt himſelf; and the Rundlet of Brandy lying by, he was tempted to take a Sup, which was at that time very much wanted, his Spirits being very low; but was loth to taſte it, leſt he ſhould grow fond of the Liquor, and grieve after it when gone: Some Moments were

† Leſt the Reader ſhould think, theſe and the following Verſes to be the Effect of my own Brain, I ſolemnly proteſt, they are what I found in his Memoirs, written with his own Hand.

ſpent

ſpent before he could come to a Reſolution: At laſt, having conſider'd the Uſe of it, which ſuited the preſent Occaſion; he concludes to take a Dram, and to uſe it like a Cordial, as it was at firſt intended for; but the Veſſel, out of which he drank, being at his Mouth, the Cordial turns to a Nectar; one Gulp decoys another down; ſo the intended Dram becomes a hearty Draught. The Pleaſantneſs of the Liquor made him forget its Nature; ſo that poor *Quarll*, who had, for the Space of near three Months before, drank nothing but Water, was preſently overcome with the Strength of the Brandy, and fell aſleep in his Chair, with the Rundlet on his bare Lap, from whence it ſoon fell to the Ground, and, being unſtopt, ran all out.

Being awak'd with Hunger, having ſlept from Evening till almoſt Noon of another Day, which he knew not whether the ſucceeding, or the next to it; ſeeing what had happen'd, he was ſorely vex'd, and could have wept at the Accident; but, conſidering the Liquor, which occaſion'd it, might perhaps, in time, have caus'd greater Miſchief, he ſoon was reconcil'd with that Loſs, but could not with that of the right Order of the Days, which having intirely forgot, hinder'd the going on of his Journal; ſo was oblig'd to make only a Memorial. That Damage being repair'd, another appears of a far greater Conſequence; the *Sunday* is loſt, which he had ſo carefully obſerv'd to that Time: How can that be made up? Now, ſaid he, ſhall I daily be in Danger of breaking the Sabbath, knowing not the Day. Oh fatal Liquor! that ever thou wert invented to cauſe ſo much Miſchief! Murders, Adulteries, and Blaſphemies, are daily, by thy moſt pernicious Uſe, occaſion'd. But why ſhould I lay the Blame upon the Uſe, when it's the Abuſe which does the Hurt? and exclaim againſt a Thing, which, being taken in Mo-

Moderation, is of ſo great a Benefit, reviving a fainting Heart, raiſing ſinking Spirits, warming cold and decay'd Nature, and aſſwaging ſeveral Pains? So blames himſelf highly for gratifying his Appetite with that wherewith he only ought to have refreſh'd Nature; and ſince that often miſguided Faculty had prompted him to commit the Fault, he dedicated that Day, in which he became ſenſible of it, to Prayers and Faſting; and every Seventh from that, he ſets apart for Divine Worſhip only, which he hop'd would keep him from breaking the Commandments, for keeping holy the Sabbath-day; it being not certain, that the Day appointed by the Church for that Purpoſe, was the very Day God had ſanctify'd for Reſt: So went to the Place where the Echoes, in many different and melodious Sounds, repeated his Thankſgiving to the Almighty, which he had fix'd upon to pay his Devotions, and there ſpent the Reſt of the Day in Prayers, and Singing of Pſalms.

The next Morning, having breakfaſted with ſome of his uſual Bread, and a Slice of the Cheeſe he found in the Cheſt, he goes about curing his Fiſh, in order to ſalt 'em: Having laid by as many, for the preſent Uſe, as he thought he could eat whilſt freſh, he improves the fair Weather to dry one Part of the Remainder, and keeps the reſt in Pickle.

The Winter being near at hand, and the Weather growing damp and cold, hinders him from his Walks; ſo, being confin'd within Doors, he employs his idle Hours in beautifying his Utenſils, which were not to be us'd upon the Fire; and beſtow'd ſome Pains in ſcraping and poliſhing the reſt of his Shells, ſome as fine as tho' they had been Nakers of Pearl; which made them not only more fit for their intended Uſes, but alſo a great Ornament to his Barrack, which he ſhelv'd round with plaited Twigs

Twigs after the manner of his Table, and ſo ſet them upon it.

Thus he ſpent the beſt Part of the Winter, makeing no farther Remarks, but that it was very ſharp, attended with high Winds, abundance of Hail and Snow, which obliged him to make a Broom to ſweep it way from about his Hut, which otherwiſe would have been damaged by it.

But ſhivering Winter, having exhauſted his froſty Stores, and weary with vexing Nature, retired; *Boreas* alſo, grown faint with hard blowing, is forced to retreat into his Cave; gentle *Zephyrus* (who till then kept up in his temperate Cell) now comes forth to uſher in the blooming Spring; ſo mildly ſlips on to inform Nature of her Favourite's Approach, who at the joyful News puts on her gay enamell'd Garb, and out of her rich Wardrobe ſupplies all Vegetables with new Veſture, to welcome the moſt lovely Gueſt. The feathered Choriſters alſo receive new Strength; their tender Lungs are repaired from the Injuries the foggy and miſty Air did occaſion; and, thus reviv'd, are placed on every budding Tree, to grace his Entrance with their harmonious Notes.

Quarll alſo, whom bad Weather had confined within-doors a conſiderable Time, which had in a great meaſure numbed his Limbs, and dulled his Senſes, now finds himſelf quite reviv'd: He no longer can keep within; the fair Weather invites him out; the ſinging Birds, on every Side, call to him; Nature itſelf fetches him out, to behold her Treaſures.

Having with unſpeakable Pleaſure walk'd ſome time, diverted with the ſweet Melody of various Kinds of ſinging Birds, and the Sight of abundance of different Sorts of bloſſom'd Trees, and blooming Flowers; all Things within the Iſland inſpiring Joy;

Joy; he had the Curioſity to go and view the Sea: So goes over his Bridge; and then, at the other Side of the Rock, where he finds more Objects, requiring as much Admiration, but affording a great deal leſs Pleaſure; vaſt Mountains of Ice, floating up and down, threatening all that came in their way.

Theſe terrible Effects of the Winter, which to that Time he was a Stranger to, occaſion'd his makeing theſe Reflections:

He, who on Billows roves, Riches or Wealth to gain,
Is ever in Danger, and labours oft in vain;
If Fortune on him ſmiles, giving his Toil Succeſs,
Each Day new Cares ariſe, which mar his Happineſs.
The only Treaſure, then, worth laying up in Store,
Is a contented Mind, which never leaves one poor:
He is not truly rich, who hankers after more.

So, having return'd Heaven Thanks for his happy State, he creeps to the North-eaſt Side of the Rock, at the Foot of which lay an extraordinary large Whale, which the late high Wind had caſt there, and dy'd for want of Water. If this, ſaid he, is all the Damage that has been done laſt Winter, it may be borne; ſo went down, and meaſured the Length of it, which was above 30 Yards, and proportionably in Bigneſs: There were Shoals of ſmall Fiſhes ſwimming about it in the ſhallow Water wherein it lay, as rejoicing at its Death: Thus, ſaid he, the Oppreſſed rejoice at a Tyrant's Fall. What Numbers of theſe have been deſtroyed to make this monſtrous Bulk of Fat! Well, happy are they, who, like me, are under Heaven's Government only. So with his Knife, which he always carried in his Pocket, cuts ſeveral Slices of the Whale, and throws them to the ſmall Fiſhes, ſaying, 'Tis but juſt ye ſhould, at laſt, feed on that which ſo long fed on you; and,

as Oil ran, in abundance, from the Places he had cut the Slices out of, it vex'd him to ſee that waſted, which might turn to good Money: But why, ſaid he, ſhould I be diſturb'd at it? What Uſe have I for any? Providence takes none, it gives me all *gratis.* So goes on feeling for Oyſters with his Staff, which he always walk'd with.

Having at laſt found a Hole, where, by their rattling at the Bottom with his Staff, he judg'd there might be a pretty many, he marks the Place, and goes home to contrive ſome Inſtrument to drag them up, being yet too cold for him to go in the Water; and, as he had no Tool but his Knife and Hatchet, both improper to make a Hole in a Board, as requiſite to make a Rake, which was wanting for that Purpoſe; he beats out the End of his Cheſt, in which there was a Knot: So, having driven it out, he faſtens the ſmall End of a Pole in it. Thus equipp'd, he went and rak'd up Oyſters, which added one Diſh to his Ordinary, and Sawce to others; yet at length his Stomach growing qualmiſh with eating altogether Fiſh, and drinking nothing but Water withal, he wiſhes he could have a little Fleſh, which he might eaſily, there being Animals enough in the Wood apparently fit for Food; but then he muſt deprive them of their Lives, barely to make his own more eaſy.

Thus he debates with himſelf for ſome time, whether or no it would not be Injuſtice for him (who only by a providential Accident was brought thither to ſave his Life) now to deſtroy thoſe Creatures, to whom Nature has given a Being, in a Land out of Man's Reach to diſturb: Yet Nature requires what ſeems to be againſt Nature for me to grant: I am faint, and like to grow worſe, the longer I abſtain from Fleſh.

Having

Having paus'd a while; Why, ſaid he, ſhould I be ſo ſcrupulous? Were not all Things created for the Uſe of Man? Now, whether is it not worſe to let a Man periſh, than to deſtroy any other Creature for his Relief? Nature craves it, and Providence gives it: Now, not to uſe it in Neceſſity, is undervaluing the Gift.

So, having concluded upon catching ſome of thoſe Animals he had ſeen in the Wood, he conſiders by what Means, having no Dogs to hunt, nor Guns to ſhoot: Having paus'd a while, he reſolves upon making Gins, wherewith he had ſeen Hares catch'd in *Europe:* Thus, taking ſome of the Cords which he found with the Sail at the Outſide of the Rock, he goes to work, and makes ſeveral, which he faſtens, at divers Gaps in the Thickſet, within the Wood, through which he judg'd that ſort of Beaſt, he had a mind for, went.

Impatient to know the Succeſs of his Snares, he gets up betimes the next Morning, and goes to examine them; in one of which he found a certain Animal ſomething like a Fawn, the Colour of a Deer, but Feet and Ears like a Fox, and as big as a well-grown Hare: He was much rejoiced at his Game, whoſe Mouth he immediately open'd, to ſee if he could find out whether it fed upon Graſs, or liv'd upon Prey. The Creature being caught by the Neck, and ſtrangled with ſtruggling before it dy'd, had brought up in its Throat ſome of the Greens it had been eating, which very much pleas'd him; accounting thoſe which liv'd upon Fleſh as bad as Carrion.

Having return'd Thanks for his good Luck, he takes it home, in order to dreſs Part of it for his Dinner; ſo caſes and guts it: But its proving to be a Female, big with three young Ones, griev'd him to the Heart, and made him repent making thoſe killing

killing Nooſes: What pity, ſaid he, ſo many Lives ſhould be loſt, and Creatures waſted! One would have ſerved me four Days; and here are four killed at once. Well, henceforth, to prevent the like Evil, I'll take alive what I juſt want, and ſave all the Females. So, having ſtuck a long Stick at both Ends in the Ground, making a Half-circle, he hangs one Quarter of the Animal on a String before a good Fire, and ſo roaſts it.

His Dinner being ready, having ſaid Grace, he ſet to eating with an uncommon Appetite; and, whether it was the Novelty of the Diſh, or that the Meat did really deſerve the Praiſe; he really thought he never eat any-thing of Fleſh, till then, comparable to it, either for Taſte or Tenderneſs.

Having din'd both plentifully and deliciouſly, he moſt zealouſly returns kind Providence Thanks for the late, and all Favours receiv'd; then, purſuant to his Reſolution, he goes about making Nets, in order to take his Game alive for the future; and, as he had no ſmall Twine to make it with, he was obliged to unravel ſome of the Sail which he luckily had by him; and, with the Thread, twiſt ſome, of the Bigneſs he judg'd proper for that Uſe.

Having made a ſufficient Quantity, he makes a Couple of Nets, about four Feet ſquare, which he faſtens in the room of the killing Snares; ſo retir'd, and reſolv'd to come and examine them every Morning.

Several Days paſs'd without taking any-thing, ſo that he wanted Fleſh a whole Week; which did begin to diſorder his Stomach, but not his Temper; being intirely reſigned to the Will of Providence, and fully contented with whatever Heaven was pleas'd to ſend.

One Afternoon, which was not his cuſtomary Time of Day to examine his Nets, being too viſible

in

in the Day-time for Game to run in; he happen'd to walk in the Wood, to take the full Dimenſions thereof, ſo chanced to go by his Nets; in one of which were taken two Animals, as big as a Kid ſix Weeks old, of a bright Dun, their Horns upright and ſtrait, their Shape like a Stag, moſt curiouſly limb'd, a ſmall Tuft of Hair on each Shoulder and Hip. By their Horns, which were but ſhort, they appear'd to be very young, which rejoiced him the more, being in Hopes to tame thoſe which he did not want for preſent Uſe; ſo carried them home, joyful of his Game, depending upon a good Dinner; but was ſadly diſappointed: The Animals he found were Antelopes (calling to mind he had ſeen them in his Travels), which, proving both Females, he had made a Reſolution to preſerve. Tho' they were too young to be with Kid, and he in great need of Fleſh, yet he would not kill them; ſo, with Cords, faſtens them to the Outſide of his Lodge; and, with conſtant feeding them, in two Months time made them ſo tame, that they follow'd him up and down; which added much to the Pleaſure he already took in his Habitation, which by that time was cover'd with green Leaves, both Top and Sides; the Stakes it was made of having ſtruck Root, and ſhot out young Branches; whoſe Strength increaſing that Summer, to fill up the Vacancy between each Plant, he pull'd the Turfs, wherewith he had cover'd the Outſide and Top of his Hut between them, to keep the Cold out in the Winter.

His former Hut, being now become a pleaſant Arbour, gave him Encouragement to beſtow ſome Pains about it towards the Embelliſhment of it, which ſeem'd to depend on being well attended. He reſolv'd upon keeping it prun'd and water'd, the better to make it grow thick and faſt, which anſwer'd his

Intent; for, in three Years time, the Stems of every Plant, that compoſed the Arbour, were grown quite cloſe, and made a ſolid Wall of about ſix Inches thick, cover'd with green Leaves without, which lay moſt regular and even, and within had a moſt agreeable ſmooth Bark, of a pleaſant Olive-colour.

His late Arbour being, by his Care and Time, and Nature's Aſſiſtance, become a matchleſs Lodge, as intended by Nature for ſomething more than human Gueſts, he now conſults to make it as commodious as beautiful. Here is, ſaid he, a delightful Dwelling; warm in the Winter, and cool in the Summer; delightful to the Eye, and comfortable to the Body; Pity it ſhould be employed to any Uſe, but Repoſe and Delight! So reſolved upon making a Kitchen near it. Thus having fixed upon a Place convenient at the Side of his Lodge, about ſix Feet from it, twelve in Length, and eight in Breadth, which he incloſed with the Turfs that covered the Outſide of his Arbour, before it was ſufficiently thick to keep out the Cold; then, having laid Sticks acroſs the Top of the Walls, which were about eight Feet high, he lays Turfs thereon, and ſo covers it, leaving an open Place for the Smoke to go out.

The Outſide being done, he goes about Inſide Neceſſaries, as Fire-places, to roaſt and boil at; thus cuts a Hole in the Ground, at a ſmall Diſtance from the Wall, after the Manner of Stew-ſtoves in Noblemens Kitchens; then, at another Place, he ſets two flat Stones, about eight or nine Inches broad, and one Foot long, edge-ways, oppoſite to one another, near two Feet aſunder; then puts a third in the ſame manner, at the End of the other two; ſo makes a Fire-place fit to roaſt at: Then, for other Conveniencies, he weaves Twigs about Sticks, ſtuck

ſtuck in the Wall on one Side of his Kitchen, where he lays the Shells fit for Utenſils, which both adorn'd and furniſh'd it.

Having completed that Piece of Work, he goes and viſits his Plantations, which he finds in a thriveing Condition; the Roots being, in ſix Months time, grown from the Bigneſs of a Pea (as they were, when firſt ſet) to that of an Egg: His Antelopes, alſo, were come to their full Growth, and complete Beauty, which exceeded moſt four-footed Beaſts; having a majeſtic Preſence, Body and Limbs reſembling a Stag, and the noble March of a Horſe: So every-thing concur'd to his Happineſs. For which, having return'd his moſt liberal Benefactor his grateful Acknowlegements, he thinks on Means to prevent any Obſtructions that may intercept the Continuation thereof; and as the Want of Cloaths was the only Cauſe, he could think of, to make him uneaſy, having but the Jacket and Hoſe which were given him on board, to ſave his own Cloaths, which, when worn out, he could not recruit; therefore, to accuſtom himſelf to go without, he thins thoſe he had; ſo takes away the Lining from the Outſide of his Cloathing, in order to wear the thickeſt in the coldeſt Weather, and ſo thins his Dreſs by Degrees; till, at laſt, he went quite naked.

Having thus concluded, as being the beſt Shift Neceſſity could raiſe him, he falls to ripping his Jacket, in the Lining whereof he finds ſeven Peas, and three Beans, which were got in at a Hole, at the Corner of the Pocket.

Thoſe few made him wiſh for more, which he had no room to hope for, they being raiſed by Seed, which the Iſland did not produce: Theſe few, ſaid he, which at preſent are hardly ſufficient to ſatisfy a Woman's Longing, may, with Time and Induſtry, be improv'd to a Quantity large enough to

ſerve me for a Meal; then lays them up againſt a proper Time to ſet 'em; ſo ſpent the Remainder of that Summer in walking about the Iſland, watering his Lodge, weeding his Root-plantation, attending his Nets, which now-and-then ſupply'd him with an Antelope or Goat, to eat at Intervals between Fiſh he commonly found on the Rock after high Winds and Storms; never failing to viſit the Sea three or four times a Week, according as the Weather did prove; thus diverting many anxious Hours with Variety of Objects that Element affords. Sometimes he had the Pleaſure of ſeeing great Whales chaſing one another, ſpouting large Streams of Water out of their Gills and Noſtrils; at other times Numbers of beautiful Dolphins rolling amongſt the Waves; now-and-then a Quantity of ſtrange monſtrous Fiſh playing on the Surface of the Sea, ſome whereof had Heads (not common to Fiſhes) like thoſe of Hogs; others not unlike thoſe of Dogs, Calves, Horſes, Lions, Bulls, Goats, and ſeveral other Creatures: Some chaſing another ſort; which, to avoid being taken, would quit their Element, and ſeek Refuge in the Air, and fly ſome Yards above the Water; till their Fins, being dry, obliged them to plunge in again.

Theſe Paſtimes, being generally ſucceeded with bad Weather and dreadful Storms, check'd the Pleaſure they gave, with a Dread of the Evil that threatened to follow. Thus commiſerating the Caſe of thoſe whoſe Misfortune it is to be expos'd to them; having ſpent ſome time in Reflection, he goes to his uſual Devotion; and calling to mind, that in all that Time he never ſaw a young Fiſh in it, he conjectur'd that ſomething muſt deſtroy the ſmall ones; and as he imagin'd, ſo it prov'd: For, at his Approach, a large Fowl flew out of the Pond with a Fiſh in its Bill, being too large for it to ſwallow.

At

At that Diſtance, the Bird being alſo upon the Wing, he could neither diſcern Colour, nor Make; but he had the Satisfaction of diſcovering the Cauſe why the Fiſhes did not increaſe, they being devour'd when young by that Creature; which to prevent, for the future, he ſtudies means to kill the Deſtroyer, Nets not being proper Inſtruments; it being requiſite, for that Purpoſe, to have one all round, as alſo, to cover the Pond, which was impoſſible, by reaſon of its Largeneſs; and a leſs being of no Uſe; the Bird, probably, not coming to one certain Place. He wiſh'd for a Gun, and Ammunition fitting, as being the moſt probable Thing to ſucceed; but no ſuch Inſtrument being within his Reach, he ponders again; during which time, a Croſs-bow offers itſelf to his Mind, but is as diſtant from his Reach as the Gun: 'Tis true, there was Stuff enough in the Iſland to make many, but no Tools but a Hatchet and a Pocket-knife; wherewith, if he made ſhift to cut and ſhape a Bow, he could not make a Latch and Spring neceſſary to it; ſo he muſt not think on't: Yet, a Bow being the only Thing he could apply to, he goes about one forthwith. Thus having pick'd a Branch of a Tree, which had the Reſemblance of Yew, and as tough, of which they are ſometimes made; he, with the Tools he had, made ſhift to make one, of about ſix Feet long, and Arrows of the ſame, which he hardens and ſtraitens over the Fire; then, having ſlit them at one End, about two or three Inches, he ſlips in a Bit of Parchment, cut ſharp at one End, and about three Inches at the other; then ties the End cloſe, to keep it in, which ſerv'd for Feathers; and, with the Raveling of ſome of the Sail, he makes a String to it.

Thus equipp'd for an Archer, wanting nothing but Skill, which is only to be gain'd by Practice,

he daily exerciſes Shooting at a Mark for the Space of a Fortnight; in which time he made ſuch an Improvement, that in three Shoots he would hit a Mark of about three Inches ſquare, at near fifty Paces Diſtance.

Being ſufficiently ſkill'd, he goes and lies in wait for his deſir'd Game; ſo placed himſelf behind a Tree, as near to the Pond as he could, whither the Bird came in a few Hours after.

The Creature being pitch'd upon the Bank, never ſtood ſtill, but kept running round, watching for a ſizeable Fiſh fit to ſwallow; ſo that he had no Opportunity to ſhoot: Till having, at laſt, ſpy'd out one, it launch'd itſelf into the Pond, but raiſed more eaſily, which gave him Time to take Aim; nevertheleſs, he miſs'd it, being in Motion; but, when come to the Top, he ſtruck it thro' the Body, as it opened its Wings, and laid it flat on the other Side of the Pond. He took it up, wonderfully pleaſed at his good Succeſs the firſt time of his practiſing his newly-acquir'd Art; yet, having taken notice of the Bird's Beauty, he had a Regret for its Death, tho' he might, in time, have rued its living; the Stock of Fiſh weekly decreaſing, by his own catching one now-and-then with a ſmall Net he made for that Uſe, when ſhort of other Proviſions; and their recruiting prevented by that Bird's daily devouring their Young.

The inexpreſſible Beauty of the Feathers, which were after the Nature of a Drake, every one diſtinguiſh'd from another by a Rim round the Edge thereof, about the Breadth of a large Thread, and of a changeable Colour, from Red to Aurora and Green; the Ribs of a delightful Blue, and the Feathers Pearl-colour, ſpeckled with a bright Yellow; the Breaſt and Belly (if it might be ſaid to be of any particular Colour) was that of a Dove's Feathers,

Feathers, rimm'd like the Back, diverſly changing; the Head, which was like that of a Swan, for Make, was Purple alſo, changing as it mov'd; the Bill like burniſh'd Gold; Eyes like a Ruby, with a Rim of Gold round it; the Feet the ſame as the Bill; the Size of the Bird was between a middling Gooſe and a Duck, and in Shape reſembling a Swan.

Having bemoan'd the Death of that delightful Creature, he carefully takes out its Fleſh, which, corrupting, would ſpoil the Outſide; then fills the Skin with ſweet Herbs, which he dry'd for that Uſe; and, having ſew'd up the Place he had cut open, to take the Fleſh out, he ſet it up in his Lodge.

His good Succeſs in Arching, made him love the Exerciſe; ſo that what odd Hours he had in the Day (beſides thoſe he ſet apart for his Divine Worſhip, and thoſe neceſſary Occupations about his Lodge, Plantations, and making Remarks), he beſtow'd in ſhooting at the Mark; which, in time, made him ſo expert, that he hardly would miſs a ſtanding Mark the Bigneſs of a Dove, at forty or fifty Yards Diſtance, once in ten times; and would ſhoot tolerably well flying; having once Occaſion to try it upon a monſtrous Eagle, which often flew rounding over the Place where his Antelopes and Goats fed, near his Lodge; which he ſhot at, fearing it would damage them, and kill'd with the ſecond Arrow.

The Summer being over, during which, having been much taken up about his Habitation and Plantations, he had neither Time nor Opportunity to make Remarks, farther than that it was ſome Days very ſhowery, and, for the moſt part, generally very hot; but now the Weather being grown ſomething cold, and the Wind pretty ſharp, he muſt be oblig'd to put on ſome Cloaths to keep it off; being as

yet too tender to go any longer without; next, to provide for his Antelopes, againſt the approaching Winter; ſo makes a Lodge for them, at the Back-ſide of his Kitchen, with Sticks, which he drove into the Ground, about two Feet from the Wall, and then bends them about three Feet from the Ground, and ſticks them in the ſaid Wall, and ſmaller Branches he interwove between them: He ſhuts up the Front, and covers the Top, leaving both Ends open for the Animals to go in at; then lays Graſs (which he dry'd on purpoſe) in the ſaid Lodge, for them to lie on. Thus, having dug up a conſiderable Quantity of Roots, and being already ſtock'd with Salt-fiſh, both dry and in Pickle, he was pretty well provided, for his Cattle and himſelf, againſt the enſuing Winter, which prov'd much like the preceding one, only not ſo ſtormy.

The ſucceeding Spring having awak'd ſlumbering Nature, and reviv'd what the preceding hard Seaſon had caus'd to droop, every Vegetable puts on new Cloathings, and recovers their wonted Beauty; each Animal aſſumes freſh Vigour; the Beaſts in the Wood leap and bound for Joy, and each Bird on the Trees ſings for Gladneſs: The whole Creation is, as it were, repair'd, and every Creature deck'd with new Life: Love, by Nature's Direction for the Increaſe of every Kind, warms their harmleſs Breaſts; each Animal ſeeks a Mate; our tame Antelopes quit their Abode, and range the Woods for the Relief ordain'd to quell their innocent Paſſion; which being aſſwag'd, they return home, pregnant with Young, to their Maſter's great Satisfaction; who, having given them over, was doubly rejoiced to ſee them come again in an increaſing Condition. Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he, I ſhall have a Stock of my own; and will not fear wanting.

So,

So, having made fitting Preparations againſt their Kidding, he goes and examines the Improvement of his new Plantation, where he found his Roots grown full as large as any of thoſe that grew wild. Make me thankful! ſaid he; I am now provided with all neceſſary Food: I ſhall no more need to rob thoſe poor Creatures of that which Nature had provided for their own proper Uſe. Next he goes and views his ſmall Stock of Peas and Beans, which he found in a very promiſing Caſe: So, whilſt the Weather was fair, he falls a clearing a Spot of Ground to ſet them in, as they increaſed.

Turning up the Ground, he found ſeveral ſorts of Roots that look'd to be eatable, ſome whereof were as big as a large Carrot, others leſs. He broke a Bit of every one; ſome of which breaking ſhort, and not being ſtringy, he judg'd they might be eatable: Then he ſmells them; and, finding the Scent not diſagreeable, he taſtes them. Some were ſweetiſh, others ſharp and hot, like Horſeradiſh; and thoſe he propoſes to uſe inſtead of Spice. Sure, ſaid he, theſe, being of a pleaſant Scent and Savour, cannot be of an offenſive Nature: So, having manur'd his Ground, he takes a Sample of every Root which he judg'd eatable, and boils them, as the ſureſt way to experiment their Goodneſs.

Moſt of them prov'd not only paſſable good, but extraordinary; ſome eating like Parſneps, others almoſt like Carrots, but rather more agreeable; ſome like Beets and Turneps; every one, in their ſeveral Kinds, as good as ever he eat in *England*, but of different Colours and Make; ſome being blueiſh, others black; ſome red, and ſome yellow: Theſe, tho' not wanted, having ſufficient to gratify a nicer Taſte than his, were nevertheleſs extremely welcome, being ſomething like his native Country Fare and Product: So, having return'd Thanks for this

moſt agreeable Addition to his Ordinary, he ſets a Mark to every Herb which thoſe Roots bore, in order to get ſome of the Seed to ſow in a Ground he would prepare: So, being provided with Fleſh, Fiſh, Herbs, and ſeveral ſorts of Roots, he goes and examines what Improvement his Peas and Beans had made; which he found increas'd to Admiration; the ſeven Peas having produced one thouſand, and the three Beans one hundred: Having returned Thanks for that vaſt Increaſe, he lays them by, in order to ſet them at a proper Seaſon, as he had done the Year before.

By this time his Antelopes had kidded, one of them having brought four Young-ones, and the ſecond three: This vaſt Addition to his Proviſions very much rejoiced him, being ſure now not to want Fleſh at his Need, which before he was in Danger of; finding but ſeldom any thing in his Net: So makes account to live upon two of the young Bucks whilſt they laſted; killing one as ſoon as fit for Meat, and ſo now-and then another, ſaving only five to breed; one whereof ſhould be a Mate to keep the Females, in Rutting-time, from the Wood; leſt, at one time or other, they ſhould ſtay away for good-and-all.

The Old-ones being well fed, as he always took care to do, providing for them Store of thoſe Greens he knew they lov'd, as alſo boil'd Roots for them now-and-then, of which they are very fond; the Young-ones throve apace, and grew very fat; ſo that in three Weeks time they were large, and fit to eat. He kill'd one; which, being roaſted, prov'd to be more delicious than any Houſe-lamb, Sucking-pig, young Fawn, or any other Sucklings whatever.

Having lived upon that, with now-and-then a little Fiſh, about one Month, which was as long as he

he could keep it eatable, having dreſs'd it at two different Times, five Days Interval; eating the cold Remains in ſeveral Manners; reſerving one of the other two Males for a time he ſhould be ſcanted, and in want of Fleſh; but was unluckily diſappointed by a Parcel of large Eagles, which flying one Morning over the Place where the young Antelopes were playing, being of a gay, as well as active Diſpoſition, who launch'd themſelves with Precipitation upon the Male he reſerv'd for time of Need, and one of the Females which he kept for Breed, ſeeing his beloved Diverters carrying away by thoſe Birds of Prey, he runs in for his Bow, but came too late with it, the Eagles being gone.

Having loſt his two dear Antelopes, eſpecially the Female, having doom'd the Male for his own eating, he hardly could forbear weeping, to think of their being cruelly torn to pieces by thoſe ravenous Creatures: Thus, having for ſome time lamented his Loſs, and bewail'd their hard Fate, he thinks on Means to prevent the like Evil, for the Time to come; and as his Bow was not always at Hand, he reſolves upon making a Net, and faſtens it between the Trees he ſaw them come in at.

The ſucceeding Winter proving very wet and windy, gave him but little Invitation to take his uſual Walks; ſo having every thing he had Occaſion for at hand, he kept cloſe to his Net-making; for which, having Twine to twiſt, and Thread to ravel out, to make the ſaid Twine, kept him employ'd till the following Spring, which came on apace.

Having finiſh'd his Net, and every thing which belong'd to it, he goes and faſtens it to the Trees, as he had propos'd; then takes a Walk to his new Plantations, which he found in a thriving Condition; for which, and other Benefits already receiv'd,

he reſolves, as in Duty bound, to attend at his uſual Place of Worſhip, and ſing Thankſgiving-Pſalms, which the Hardneſs of the Weather had kept him from all the late Winter; but it coming into his Mind, that, whilſt he was at his Devotion, returning Thanks for the fair Proſpect of a plentiful Crop, his Antelopes would break into the Cloſe, the Hedge being as yet but thin, and devour the promiſing Buds, which are the principal Occaſion of his Devotion; this not altogether improper Conſideration puts a ſad Check to his religious Intention: And tho' there was a vaſt Obligation to prompt him to the Performance of that Part of his Duty, yet he could not, with Wiſdom, run the Hazard, out of mere Devotion, to loſe ſo promiſing a Crop, which he ſhould never be able to retrieve; all his Stock of Seed being then in Graſs.

As he was debating in his Mind, between Religion and Reaſon, whether the latter ought not to be a Director to the former, he perceiv'd his Antelopes making towards the Peas, whither they, doubtleſs, would have got in, had he not return'd, and driven them another Way: Which Accident convinced him he might find a more proper Time to go about his Devotion; no Man being requir'd to worſhip to his Prejudice. So, having put off his religious Duty till he had better ſecur'd his Peas and Beans, he cuts a Parcel of Branches, wherewith he ſtops thoſe Gaps, to prevent the Creatures going in; and, having completed his Work, he goes to his Devotion, adding to his uſual Thankſgiving a particular Collect for his luckily being in the Way to prevent his being fruſtrated of the Bleſſing Heaven ſo fairly promiſed to beſtow on his Labours.

Having paid his Devotion, he walks about the Iſland, being all the Way delighted with the Birds celebrating their Maker's Praiſe, in their different har-

harmonious Notes: Every thing in Nature, ſaid he, anſwers the End of its Creation, but ungrateful Man! who, ambitious to be wiſe, as his Creator, only learns to make himſelf wretched. Thus he walks till the Evening, making ſeveral Reflections on the different Conditions of Men, preferring his preſent State to that of *Adam* before his Fall, who could not be ſenſible of Happineſs, having never known a Reverſe; which, otherwiſe, he would have been more careful to prevent. Being come home, and near Bed-time, he firſt eats his Supper; and then, having perform'd his cuſtomary religious Service, he goes to Bed: The next Morning, after paying his uſual Devotion, he takes a Walk to his Plantations, on which he implores a Continuation of the proſperous Condition they appear to be in; next, he goes to examine his new Nets, in which he finds a Brace of Fowls like Ducks, but twice as large, and exceeding beautiful: The Drake (which he knew by a colour'd Feather on his Rump) was of a fine Cinnamon Colour upon his Back, his Breaſt of a Mazarine Blue, the Belly of a deep Orange, his Neck green, Head purple, his Eyes, Bill, and Feet, red; every Colour changing moſt agreeably as they mov'd. The Duck was alſo very beautiful, but of quite different Colours, and much paler than the Drake's.

The Diſappointment in catching thoſe delightful Fowls, inſtead of ravenous Eagles, as he had purpoſed, no-ways diſpleas'd him, but he rather was rejoiced to have ſuch beautiful Fowls to look at; yet it went much againſt his Mind to deprive thoſe Creatures of their Liberty (the greateſt Comfort in Life), which Nature took ſuch Pains to adorn: But, ſaid he, they were created for the Uſe of Man: So, in keeping them for my Pleaſure, they will but anſwer the End of their Creation. Their Confinement

ſhall

ſhall be no ſtricter than my own ; they ſhall have the whole Iſland to range in. He then pinions them, puts them in the Pond, and makes Baſkets for them to ſhelter in, which he places in the Branches of thoſe Trees that hung cloſeſt to the Water, taking particular Care to feed them daily with Roots roaſted and boiled ; and the Guts of the Fiſh, and other Creatures, he uſed for his own Eating ; which made them thrive mainly, and take to the Place ; ſo that they bred in their Seaſon.

The five Antelopes, had, by this time kidded, and brought ſixteen young ones : His Peas and Beans alſo were wonderfully improved, having that Seaſon enough to ſtock the Ground the Year following. Thus he returned kind Providence Thanks for the vaſt Increaſe, and concludes to live upon the young Antelopes as long as they laſted, reſerving only one for Suck of the Old-ones, to keep them in Milk, of which he had taken Notice they had plenty, deſigning to draw it daily for his own Uſe ; ſo that, in a little time, he had enough to ſkim for Cream, which he uſed for Sawce inſtead of Butter, and made ſmall Cheeſes of the reſt : Now having a pretty Store of Dairy-ware, he reſolves to make a Place to keep it in ; the Kitchen wherein he was obliged to lay his Salt-fiſh (which commonly ſmells ſtrong) not being a proper Place for Cream and Milk : For which End he makes a Dairy-houſe at the other Side of his Dwelling, with Branches of Trees, after the manner of a cloſe Arbour, and thatches it over with Graſs ; which anſwering the Kitchen in Form and Situation, made uniform Wings, that added as much to the Beauty as Conveniency of the Habitation.

Having completed his Dairy, he proceeds in his Reſolution of making Cheeſe, having learned the Way in *Holland* ; and for want of Rennet to turn his Milk, he takes ſome of the Horſe-radiſh-ſeed,

which, being of a hot Nature, had the ſame Effect: Having Curd to his Mind, he ſeaſons it to his Palate; then with his Hatchet, he cuts a Notch round in the Bark of a Tree, about eighteen Inches in Circumference; and a ſecond in the ſame manner, ſix Inches below that: Then ſlits the Circle, and with his Knife gently opens it, parting it from the Tree: Thus he makes as many Hoops as he judged would contain his Paſte, which, being girded round with Cords to keep them from opening, he fills with the ſaid Paſte, and lays them by, till fit to eat.

This being done, which completed his Proviſions, he returns Thanks for thoſe Bleſſings which had been ſo liberally beſtow'd on him: Now, ſaid he, Heaven be prais'd! I exceed a Prince in Happineſs: I have a Habitation ſtrong and laſting, beautiful and convenient, Freehold, a Store of Comforts, with all Neceſſaries of Life free-coſt, which I enjoy with Peace and Pleaſure uncontrouled: Yet I think there is ſtill ſomething wanting to complete my Happineſs: If a Partner in Grief leſſens Sorrow, certainly it muſt in Delight augment Pleaſure. What Objects of Admiration are here concealed, and, like a Miſer's Treaſure, hid from the World! If Man, who was created for Bliſs, could have been completely happy alone, he would not have had a Companion given him: Thus he walks about, thoughtful, till Bed-time.

In that Diſpoſition he goes to Bed, and ſoon fell aſleep: The Night alſo, being windy, added to his heavy Diſpoſition: But his Mind finds no Repoſe: it ſtill runs on upon the Subject, that took it up the Day before, and forms Ideas ſuitable to its Inclination; and as Solitude was the Motive of its being diſturbed, he indulges it with the Thoughts of Company, dreaming that the Fame of his Station, and happy State of Life, was ſpread about the World;

World; that it prompted a vaſt Number of People, from all Parts, to come to it, which at laſt induced ſeveral Princes to claim a Right to it; which being decided by a bloody War, a Governor was ſent, who laid Taxes, demanded Duties, rais'd Rents, and warns him to be gone, having fix'd upon his Habitation for himſelf to dwell in. Being ſadly diſturbed, he cries out in his Sleep, This is a great Puniſhment for my Uneaſineſs: Could I not be contented with being Lord of this Iſland, without provoking Heaven to bring me under the Power of extorting Governors?

There happening a great Noiſe, he ſtarts out of his Sleep, with the Thought of hearing a Proclamation; and cry'd out, Alas! 'tis too late to proclaim an Evil which is already come: But, being thoroughly awake, and the Noiſe ſtill continuing, he found he had been dreaming, which very much rejoiced him: He therefore puts on his Cloaths, and haſtens to the Place he heard the Noiſe come from.

Being within forty or fifty Yards thereof, he ſaw a Number of Monkeys of two different Kinds; one ſort ſquealing and fighting againſt the other, without intermixing, but ſtill rallying, as they ſcatter'd in the Scuffle. He ſtood ſome time admiring the Order they kept in; and the Battle ſtill continuing as fierce as at firſt, he advanced to ſee what they fought about; for he took notice, they very much ſtrove to keep their Ground.

At his Approach the Battle ceas'd; and the Combatants, retiring at ſome Diſtance, left the Spot of Ground, on which they fought, clear; whereon lay a conſiderable Quantity of Wild Pomgranates which the Wind had ſhook off the Trees the Night before, and which were the Occaſion of their Strife.

His coming having caus'd a Truce, every one of thoſe Creatures keeping ſtill and quiet during his Stay,

Stay, he reſolves to uſe his Endeavours to make a ſolid Peace; and as that Difference had ariſen from the Fruit there preſent, to which he could ſee no Reaſon but that each Kind had an equal Right; he divides it into two even Parcels, which he lays oppoſite to each other towards both the Parties, retiring a little Way, to ſee whether this Expedient would decide the Quarrel: Which anſwer'd his Intent; thoſe Animals quietly coming to that Share next to them, and peaceably carrying it away, each to their Quarters. This occaſion'd ſeveral Reflections on the frivolous, and often unjuſt Quarrels that ariſe among Princes, which create ſuch bloody Wars, as prove the Deſtruction of vaſt Numbers of their Subjects. If Monarchs, ſaid he, always acted with as much Reaſon as theſe Creatures, how much Blood and Money would they ſave! Thus goes on to his uſual Place of Worſhip, in order to return Thanks, that he was free of that Evil, the Dream whereof had ſo tortur'd his Mind; tho' he confeſs'd he juſtly deſerv'd the Reality, for his Uneaſineſs in the happieſt of Circumſtances.

Having paid his Devotion, he takes a Walk to ſee how his Peas and Beans came on, which he found in a very improving Diſpoſition, each Stem bearing a vaſt Number of well-fill'd Cods. Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he; I ſhall eat of this Year's Crop, and have ſufficient to ſtock my Ground the enſuing one.

Thus being plentifully ſupply'd with Neceſſaries, and in a pleaſant Iſland, every thing about him being come to Perfection; his Dwelling, which ſeems intended by Nature for ſome immortal Gueſt, being, by Time, yearly repair'd and improv'd, leaving no room for Care; yet the unwiſe Man, as if an Enemy to his own Eaſe, cannot be contented with the Enjoyment of more than he could reaſona-

bly

bly crave, but muſt diſturb his Mind with what concerns him not: What pity, ſaid he, ſo delightful a Habitation, attended with ſuch Conveniencies, and ſituated in ſo wholſome an Air, and fruitful a Land, ſhould at my Death loſe all theſe wonderful Properties, being become uſeleſs for want of ſomebody to enjoy them! What Admiration will here be loſt for want of Beholders! But what kind of Man could I ſettle it upon, worthy of ſo fine an Inheritance? Were it at my Pleaſure to chuſe myſelf an Heir, ſuch only appear virtuous, whoſe weak Nature confides to Chaſtity: Every Conſtitution cannot bear Exceſs: Want of Courage occaſions Mildneſs, and lack of Strength good Temper: Thus Virtue is made a Cloak to Infirmity: But why do I thus willingly hamper myſelf with thoſe Cares Providence has been pleaſed to free me of?

Leave the Miſer the knowing Care,
Who'll ſucceed him, or be his Heir;
That racks his Soul with Diſcontent,
Leſt what he rak'd for ſhould be ſpent.
His Gold to him is far more dear,
Than all his Friends or Kindred near.

Thus he holds the Iſland from Providence: Freely he bequeaths it to whom Providence ſhall think fit to beſtow it upon: And, that his Heir may the better know the Worth of the Gift, he draws a Map of the whole Eſtate; and made an Inventory of every individual Tenement, Appurtenances, Meſſuages, Goods and Chattels, and alſo a Draught of the Terms and Conditions he is to hold the here-mention'd Poſſeſſions upon; *viz.*

Imprimis, A fair and moſt pleaſant Iſland, richly ſtock'd with fine Trees, and adorn'd with ſeveral delight-

delightful Groves, planted and improved by Nature, ſtor'd with choice and delicious Roots and Plants for Food, bearing Peas and Beans; likewiſe a noble Fiſh-pond, well ſtock'd with divers ſorts of curious Fiſh; and a ſpacious Wood, harbouring ſeveral ſorts of Wildfowl, and Beaſts fit for a King's Table.

Item, A Dwelling commenc'd by Art, improv'd by Nature, and completed by Time, which yearly keeps it in Repair, as alſo its Furniture.

Item, THE Offices and Appurtenances thereof, with the Utenſils thereunto belonging; which ſaid Iſland, Dwelling, *&c.* are Freehold, and clear from Taxes; in no temporal Dominion, therefore ſcreen'd from any Impoſitions, Duties, and Exactions; defended by Nature from Invaſions or Aſſaults; guarded and ſupported by Providence: All which incomparable Poſſeſſions are to be held upon the following Terms; *viz.*

THAT whoſoever ſhall be by Providence ſettled in this bleſſed Abode, ſhall, Morning and Evening, conſtantly (unleſs prevented by ill Weather or Accident), attend at the Eaſt Side of this Iſland, and within the Alcove Nature prepared for the Lodgment of ſeveral harmonious Echoes, and there pay his Devotion; ſinging Thankſgiving-Pſalms to the great Origin and Director of all Things, whoſe Praiſes he will have the Comfort to hear repeated by melodious Voices.

NEXT, he ſhall religiouſly obſerve and keep a Seventh-day for Worſhip only, from the Riſing of the Sun till the going down thereof: Therefore he ſhall, the Day before, make all neceſſary Proviſion for that Day.

THAT

THAT he ſhall, after any tempeſtuous Wind or Storm, viſit the Sea at the Outſide of the Rock, at the Eaſt, South, Weſt, and North Ends, in order to aſſiſt any one in Diſtreſs.

HE ſhall not be waſteful of any thing whatſoever, eſpecially of any Creature's Life; killing no more, than what is neceſſary for his Health: But ſhall every Day examine his Nets, ſetting at Liberty the Overplus of his Neceſſity, leſt they ſhould periſh in their Confinement.

HE muſt alſo keep every thing in the ſame Order and Cleanneſs he ſhall find them in; till and manure the Ground yearly; ſet and ſow Plants and Seeds, fit for Food, in their proper Seaſons.

Having written this at the Bottom of the Map he had drawn, being Supper-time, he takes his Meal; then goes to his uſual Evening Devotion; and, after an Hour's Walk, to his Bed, ſleeping quietly all Night, as being eaſy in his Mind.

The next Morning he takes his uſual Walks, and viſits his Nets: In that he had ſet for Eagles, he found a Fowl as big as a Turkey, but the Colour of a Pheaſant, only a Tail like a Partridge: This having no Sign of being a Bird of Prey, he was loth to kill it; but, having had no freſh Meat for above a Week, he yields to his Appetite, and dreſſes it, eating part thereof for his Dinner: It was very fat and plump, and eat much like a Pheaſant, but rather tenderer, and fuller of Gravy.

Tho' he was very well pleaſed with the Bird he had taken, yet he had rather it had been one of the Eagles, which held his young Antelopes in Jeopardy: But as he could not deſtroy them with his Net, which

which had hung a conſiderable time without the intended Succeſs, he projects the Prevention of their Increaſe, by deſtroying their Eggs, leaving his Nets wholly for the Uſe they had been ſucceſsful in; and ſearches the Clifts of the Rock next to the Sea, where thoſe Birds commonly build; where having found ſeveral Neſts, he takes away the Eggs that were in them (being then their Breeding-time), and carries them Home, in order to empty the Shells, and hang them up-and-down in his Habitation, amongſt the green Leaves which covered the Cieling thereof; but, having accidentally broke one, and the Yolk and white thereof, being like that of a Turkey, he had the Curioſity to boil one, and taſte it, which eat much after the manner of a Swan's: The reſt he ſaved to eat now-and-then for a Change, reaping a double Advantage by robbing thoſe Birds; leſſening thereby the Damage they might do him in time, and adding a Diſh to his preſent Fare.

In this proſperous way he lived fifteen Years, finding no Alteration in the Weather or Seaſons, nor meeting, in all the Time, with any Tranſactions worthy of Record; ſtill performing his uſual Exerciſes, and taking his Walks with all the Content and Satisfaction his happy Condition could procure; intirely forſaking all Thoughts or Deſires of ever quitting the bleſſed Station he then had in his Poſſeſſion.

Thus having walked the Iſland over and over (which tho' delightful, yet the frequent Repetition of the Wonders it produces, renders them, as it were, common, and leſs admirable), he proceeds to view the Sea, whoſe fluid Element, being ever in Motion, daily affords new Objects of Admiration.

The Day being very fair, and the Weather as calm, he ſat down upon the Rock, taking Pleaſure in

in ſeeing the Waves roll, and, as it were, chaſe one another; the next purſuing the firſt, on which it rides, when come at; and being itſelf overtaken by a ſucceeding, is alſo mounted on, thus, Wave upon Wave, till come to a bulky Body, too heavy for the undermoſt to bear, ſunk all together: This, ſaid he, is a true Emblem of Ambition; Men, ſtriving to outdo one another, are often undone.

As he was making Reflections on the Emptineſs of Vanity and Pride, returning Heaven Thanks, that he was ſeparated from the World, which abounds in nothing elſe; a Ship appears at a great Diſtance, a Sight he had not ſeen ſince his Shipwreck: Unlucky Invention! ſaid he, that thou ſhouldſt ever come into Mens Thoughts! The *Ark*, which gave the firſt Notion of a floating Habitation, was ordered for the Preſervation of Man; but its fatal Copies daily expoſe him to Deſtruction. Haveing therefore returned Heaven Thanks for his being out of thoſe Dangers, he makes a ſolemn Vow, never to return into them again, tho' it were to gain the World: But his Reſolution prov'd as brittle, as his Nature was frail: The Men on board had ſpy'd him out with their Perſpective-glaſſes; and, ſuppoſing him to be ſhipwreck'd, and to want Relief, ſent their Long-boat with two Men to fetch him away.

At their Approach his Heart alters its Motion; his Blood ſtops from its common Courſe; his Sinews are all ſtagnated; which intirely unframes his Reaſon, and makes him a Stranger to his own Inclination; which, ſtruggling with his wavering Reſolution, occaſions a Debate between Hope and Fear: But the Boat, being come pretty nigh, gave Hope the Advantage, and his late Reſolution yields to his reviv'd Inclination; which, being now encouraged by a probable Opportunity of being anſwer'd, ruſhes

ruſhes on to Execution. He now, quitting all his former Reliance on Providence, depends altogether upon his getting away, bleſſing the lucky Opportunity of ſeeing his native Country again, for which Pleaſure he freely quits and forſakes all the Happineſs he enjoy'd; gladly abandoning his delightful Habitation, and plentiful Iſland: He thinks no more of Providence; his Mind is intirely taken up with his Voyage: But Diſappointment, which often attends the greateſt Probabilities, ſnatches Succeſs out of his Hand before he could graſp it, and intercepts his ſuppoſedly infallible Retreat: The Boat could not approach him, by reaſon of the Rocks running a great Way into the Sea under Water; nor could he come at the Boat for ſharp Points, and deep Holes, which made it unfordable as well as unnavigable; ſo that after ſeveral Hours ſtriving in vain on both ſides, to come at one another, the Men, after they had ſtrove all they could, but to no purpoſe, ſaid ſomething to him in a Rage, which he underſtood not, and went without him, more wretched now, than he was when he was firſt caſt away: His full Dependence upon a Retreat made him abandon all further Reliance on Providence, whom then he could implore; but now, having ungratefully deſpiſed Heaven's Bounties, which had been ſo largely beſtowed on him, he has forfeited all Hopes of Aſſiſtance from thence, and expects none from the World: Thus deſtitute, and in the greateſt Perplexity, he cries out, Whither ſhall I now fly for Help? The World can give me none, and I dare not crave any more from Heaven. Oh curſed Deluſion! but rather curſed Weakneſs! Why did I give way to it? Had I not enough of the World, or was I grown weary of being happy? So ſaying, he falls a weeping: Could I ſhed a Flood of Tears, ſufficient to waſh away my Fault, or eaſe

me

me of the Remorſe it does create! But why does my diſtracted Fancy propoſe Impoſſibilities? Is not the Ocean ſufficient to rid me of this wretched Life? Then adieu, infectious World, thou Magician of Iniquity! The Thoughts of which are now more offenſive than the moſt nauſeous Odour of an old Sepulchre. Here he was going to caſt himſelf into the Sea; but a vaſt large Monſter, riſing out of the Water, with its terrible Jaws wide open, looking at him, in a moſt dreadful manner, ſtopt the Execution of his deſperate Deſign: Thus, Death, appearing in a different Shape than he had propoſed to meet him in, frightens away his Reſolution of dying: I may, ſaid he, condemn myſelf; but Vengeance belongs to God alone, who rejects not Tears of Repentance, but always extends his Mercies towards the Penitent; and ſince St. *Peter*, after thrice denying his LORD and MASTER, was by repenting and weeping over his Sin, received again into Favour, I hope theſe my weak, but ſincere Tokens of Repentance will be accepted of, for ever divorcing myſelf from the World, and never thinking of its alluring Pleaſures, but to deſpiſe them. And, for the better Performance of that pious Reſolution, he ſets that woful Day apart (in which he was about to commit that fatal Deed) for Prayer and Faſting: Thus he went home, and having eat nothing ſince the Day before, he ſpent the Remainder of that in faſting and praying, ſinging penitential Pſalms till dark Night, that Nature urged him to repoſe.

The Pains and Labour he had been at in the Day, climbing up and down the Rock, dragging himſelf to-and-fro', to come at the Boat, having very much rack'd his Limbs; and the Diſappointment of his full Dependence on the late promiſing Succeſs, as alſo the tormenting Remorſe, and heavy Grief, his

for his ſinful Reliance thereon, much fatiguing his Mind, render'd Sleep, which is ordain'd for the Refreſhment of Nature, of no manner of Help to him: His Thoughts are continually diſturb'd with frightful Viſions; all his paſt Dangers glare at him, as if threatening their Return; but that which terrified him moſt was, the frightful Idea of the terrible Monſter which roſe out of the Sea at that Inſtant he was going to plunge himſelf in it.

Being awak'd out of his reſtleſs Sleep, rather more fatigu'd than when he lay down, having ſtill the terrible Aſpect of the Sea-monſter in his Mind, he made ſeveral Reflections on the execrable Nature of his intended Sin; admiring the immenſe Goodneſs of Providence, who, to deter him from the committing of the enormous Act, had order'd that (beyond Imagination) terrible Object, as the moſt ſuitable to the Barbarity of his Deſign, to ſtrike into him that Terror which the Species of Death he had fix'd upon could not. Thus having with Tears acknowleg'd the Enormity of his Reſolution, he returns Providence Thanks for its ineſtimable Goodneſs, who (notwithſtanding his late moſt ungrateful Elopement) preſerved him from eternal, as well as temporal Ruin: Having paid his Devotion, and ſung a Thankſgiving-pſalm, he takes a little Nouriſhment, his Spirits being low with his paſt Fatigue and Faſting; and as he could not put out of his Eyes the terrible Aſpect of the Monſter, which was beyond any chimerical Conception, he reſolves to draw it according to the Idea he had in his Mind: Perhaps, ſaid he, having often the Repreſentation before mine Eyes, 'twill make the Object more familiar, and leſs frightful. Taking therefore Pen and Ink, and a Sheet of Parchment, Now, ſaid he, how ſhall I repreſent what is paſt Imagination to conceive? A Form without Likeneſs, and yet com-

parable to the moſt terrible Part of every frightful Creature; a vaſt large Head, reſembling that of a Lion, bearing three Pair of Horns; one Pair upright, like that of an Antelope; another Pair like a Wild Goat's; two more bending backwards; its Face arm'd all round with Darts, like a Porcupine; vaſt great Eyes, ſparkling like a Flint ſtruck with a Steel, its Noſe like a Wild Horſe, always ſnarling; the Mouth of a Lion, and Teeth of a Panther; the Fences of an Elephant, and the Tuſks of a Wild Boar; ſhoulder'd like a Giant, with Claws like an Eagle, body'd and cover'd with Shells like a Rhinoceros, and the Colour of a Crocodile.

Having likened every different Part, he proceeds in the Repreſentation thereof; which, being finiſh'd, put him in the greateſt Admiration! Sure, ſaid he, if Nature had a Hand in thy Making, it was to aſſemble, in one Creature, all the fierceſt and dreadfulleſt Animals that are moſt frightful and terrible! Now, perhaps, this being conſtantly before me, may come leſs in my Mind. Then fixing it againſt his Wall, This, ſaid he, will be alſo a Memorandum of my late Vow, never to endeavour or wiſh to go from hence, whatever Opportunity offers, tho' attended with ever ſo great a Probability of Succeſs, and Proſpect of Gain; fully ſettling his whole Mind and Affection on the State and Condition Heaven has been pleas'd to place him in; reſolving to let nothing enter into his Thoughts, but his moſt grateful Duty to ſo great a Benefactor, who has ſo often and miraculouſly reſcued him from Death.

Thus having intirely baniſh'd the World out of his Mind, which before often diſturb'd it, he limits his Thoughts within the Bounds of his bleſſed Poſſeſſion, which affords him more than is ſufficient to make his Life happy; where Plenty flows on him, and Pleaſure attends his Deſires; abounding in all

Things that can gratify his Appetite, or delight his Fancy: A Herd of delightful Antelopes, bounding and playing about his Habitation, divert him at home; and in his Walks he is entertain'd with the Harmony of divers Kinds of Singing-birds; every Place he comes at offers him new Objects for Pleaſure: Thus all ſeems to concur in completing his Happineſs.

In this moſt bleſſed State he thinks himſelf as *Adam* before his Fall, having no room for Wiſhes, only that every thing may continue in its preſent Condition; but it cannot be expected, that fair Weather, which ſmiles on his Beauty, will not change. The Sun muſt go its Courſe, and the Seaſons take their Turn; which Conſiderations muſt, for the preſent, admit ſome ſmall Care: He is naked, and his tender Conſtitution ſuſceptible of the Cold; therefore the Cloaths he was caſt away in being worn out, he is oblig'd to think of providing ſomething to defend his Limbs from the Hardneſs of the approaching Winter, whilſt it is yet warm. Haveing conſider'd what to make a Wrapper of, he concludes upon uſing ſome of the ſame Graſs he made his Mats of, on which he lay, being ſoft and warm, very fit for that Purpoſe: Of this he cuts down a ſufficient Quantity, which, when ready to work, he makes ſmall Twine with, and plaits it in narrow Braids, which he ſews together with ſome of the ſame, and ſhapes a long looſe Gown, that covered him to his Heels, and a Cap of the ſame.

By that time he had finiſh'd his Winter-garb, the Weather was grown cold enough for him to put it on: The froſty Seaſon came on apace, in which there fell ſuch a Quantity of Snow, that he was forced to make a Broom, and ſweep it away from about his Habitation twice a Day; as alſo the ſame he made to the Places he had Occaſion to go to,

toſſing the Snow on each Side, which, before the Winter was over, met a-top, and cover'd it all the Way; which oblig'd him to keep within-doors for a conſiderable time, and melt Snow inſtead of Water; leſt, going for ſome, he might chance to be buried among the Snow.

The Winter being over, and the Snow diſſolv'd, the gay Spring advances apace, offering Nature its uſual Aſſiſtance, repairing the Damages the late Froſt had done; which joyful Tidings made every-thing ſmile. *Quarll*, alſo, finding himſelf reviv'd, took his former Walks, which the preceding bad Weather had kept him from, though there had been no conſiderable Storm the Winter before.

He having a Mind to view the Sea, and being come to the Outſide of the North-weſt End of the Rock, ſees, at the Foot thereof, ſomething like Part of the Body of a large hollow Tree, the Ends whereof were ſtopp'd with its own Pitch; and the Middle, which was ſlit open from End to End, and kept gaping by a Stick laid acroſs.

This put him in mind of Canoes, with which the *Indians* paddle up and down their Lakes and Rivers; and, being on that Side of the Rock next to the Iſland of *California*, he fanſied ſome of them were come to viſit his Iſland, tho' not many in Number; their Canoes holding, at the moſt, but two Men; and, for the generality, one only: Yet, as ſome of theſe People are accounted great Thieves, daily robbing one another, he haſtens home to ſecure what he had; but it was too late: They had been there already, and had taken away the Cloaths he found in the Cheſt; which being, by far, too little for him, hung careleſly on a Pin behind his Door. Had they been contented with that, he would not have regarded it; but they carried away ſome of his curious Shells, and, what griev'd him moſt, the fine

fine Bird he had taken ſuch Pains to dreſs and ſtuff, and Care to preſerve; as alſo, his Bow and Arrows.

Having miſs'd theſe Things, which he much valued, he haſtens to the Outſide of the Rock, with his long Staff in his Hand, in Hopes to overtake them before they could get into their Canoe; but happen'd to go too late, they being already got near Half a League from the Rock: Yet they did not carry away their Theft. For there ariſing ſome Wind, it made the Sea ſomewhat rough, and overſet their Canoe; ſo that what was in it was all loſt but the two *Indians*, who moſt dextrouſly turn'd it on its Bottom again, and with ſurpriſing Activity leap'd in it, one at the one Side, and the other at the oppoſite; ſo that, the Canoe being trimm'd at once, they paddled out of his Sight.

Having ſeen as much of them as he could, he walks to the North-eaſt Side, in order to diſcover the Effect of the high Wind which happened the Night before.

Being come to the Outſide of the Rock, he perceives, at a Diſtance, ſomething like a large Cheſt, but having no Lid on it. Taking that to be the Product of ſome late Shipwreck, he griev'd at the fatal Accident: How long, reflected he, will Covetouſneſs decoy Men to purſue Wealth, at the Coſt of their precious Lives? Has not Nature provided every Nation and Country a Sufficiency for its Inhabitants? that they will rove on this moſt dangerous and boiſterous Sea, which may be titled *Death's Dominions*; many periſhing therein, and not one on it being ſafe.

As he was bewailing their Fate who he imagin'd had been caſt away, he ſees two Men come down the Rock, with each a Bundle in his Arms, who went to that which he had taken to be a Cheſt; and, having put their Load in it, puſh'd it away till come

to deeper Water; then, having got in it, with a long Staff ſhov'd it off, till they could row to a Long-boat that lay at ſome Diſtance behind a jetting Part of the Rock, which ſcreen'd it from his Sight, as alſo the Ship it belonged to.

The Sight of this much amaz'd him, and made him ceaſe condoling others ſuppos'd Loſs, to run home, and examine his own; well knowing thoſe Bundles, he ſaw carried away, muſt needs belong to him; there being no other Moveables in the Iſland but what were in his Lodge.

Being come home, he finds, indeed, what he ſuſpected: Thoſe Villains had moſt ſacrilegiouſly rifled and ranſacked his Habitation, not leaving him ſo much as one of the Mats to keep his poor Body from the Ground. His Winter-garb alſo is gone, and what elſe they could find for their Uſe.

The Loſs of thoſe Things, which he could not be without, fill'd him with Sorrow: Now, ſaid he, I am in my firſt State of Being; naked I came into the World, and naked ſhall I go out of it; at which he fell a weeping.

Having griev'd awhile, Why, ſaid he, ſhould I thus caſt myſelf down? Is not Providence, who gave me them, able to give me more? Thus, having reſolv'd before Winter to repleniſh his Loſs, he reſts himſelf contented, and gives the Ruffians evil Action the beſt Conſtruction he could. Now I think on it, ſaid he, theſe ſurely are the Men, who, about twelve Months ſince, would charitably have carried me hence, but could not for want of neceſſary Implements; and now, being better provided, came to accompliſh their hoſpitable Deſign; but, not finding me, ſuppoſing I was either dead or gone, took away what was here of no Uſe: Much Good may what they have got do them, and may it be of as much Uſe to them as it was to me. Thus

walks

walks out, in order to cut Graſs to dry, and make himſelf new Bedding, and a Winter-garb.

Having walk'd about Half a Mile, he perceives the ſame Men coming towards the Pond: Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he; here they be ſtill. Now, when they ſee I am not gone, nor willing to go, they will return my Things, which they are ſenſible I cannot do without; with which Words he goes up to them.

By that time they had caught his two old Ducks, which, being pinion'd, could not fly away as the reſt did. He was much vex'd to ſee the beſt of his Stock thus taken away; yet, as he thought they were come to do him Service, he could grudge them nothing, that would any-wiſe gratify ſo good an Intent. But having return'd them Thanks for their good Will, he told them he was very happy in the Iſland, and had made a Vow never to go out of it.

Theſe being *Frenchmen*, and of an Employment where Politeneſs is of little Uſe, being Fiſhermen, and not underſtanding what he ſaid, only laugh'd in his Face, and went on to the Purpoſe they came about: Then having as many of the Ducks as they could get, they proceeded towards the Houſe where they had ſeen the Antelopes; ſome of which not running away at their Approach, they propos'd to catch hold of them.

Being come to the Place where they us'd to feed, which was near the Dwelling, the young ones, not being us'd to ſee any Men in Cloaths, nor any-body but their Maſter, preſently fled; but the two old ones, which he had bred up, were ſo tame, that they ſtood ſtill; only when the Men came to them, they crept cloſe to him, which gave the Men Opportunity to lay hold of them; when, notwithſtanding *Quarll*'s repeated Intreaties, they tied a

Halter about their Horns, and barbarouſly led them away.

Quarll was griev'd to the Heart to ſee his Darlings, which he had taken ſuch Care to breed up, and which were become the principal Part of his Delight, following him up and down; and which, by their jumping and playing before him, often diſpers'd melancholy Thoughts; notwithſtanding all theſe endearing Qualifications, thus hal'd away: He weeps, and on his Knees begs they may be left; and, tho' they underſtood not his Words, his Actions were ſo expreſſive and moving, that had they had the Humanity of Canibals, who eat one another, they would have yielded to ſo melting an Object as the poor broken-hearted *Quarll* was: But the inflexible Boors went on, cruelly haling and dragging the poor Creatures; which, as if ſenſible of the Barbarity of the Act, look'd back to their afflicted Maſter, as craving his Aſſiſtance; which, at laſt, ſo exaſperated him, that he was ſeveral times tempted to lay on the Raviſhers with his long Staff; but as often was ſtopt by the following Conſideration: Shall I, ſaid he, be the Deſtruction of my Fellow-creatures, to reſcue out of their Hands, Animals of which I have an improving Store left, and deprive them of their Healths, and perhaps of their Lives, to recover what coſt me nought? Let them go with what they have, and the Merit of their Deed be their Reward. Thus he walks about melancholy, bemoaning his poor Antelopes Fate, and his own Misfortune: They were us'd to Liberty, ſaid he, which they now are depriv'd of, and for which they will pine and die, which, for their ſake, I cannot but wiſh; for Life without Liberty is a continual Death.

As he was walking, thinking (as 'tis uſual, after the Loſs of any thing one loves) of the Pleaſure he had

had during the Enjoyment, the Ruffians, having ſecur'd the poor Animals, came back with Ropes in their Hands. What do they want next? ſaid he: Have they not all they deſire? Would they carry away my Habitation alſo? Sure they have no Deſign on my Perſon: If ſo, they will not take it ſo eaſily as they did my dear Antelopes. Thus he reſolv'd to exerciſe his Quarter-ſtaff, if they offer'd to lay Hands on him. The Villains, whoſe Deſign was to bind him, and ſo carry him away, ſeeing him arm'd and reſolute, did not judge it ſafe for them to advance within the Reach of his Weapon, but keep at ſome Diſtance, divining how to ſeize him.

Quarll, who, by their conſulting, gueſs'd at their Deſign, not thinking proper to let them come to a Reſolution, makes at the neareſt, who immediately takes to his Heels; and then to the next, who immediately does the ſame: Thus he follows them about for a conſiderable time; but they divided, in order to tire him with running, till the Night approaching, and the Wind riſing, made them fear their Retreat might be dangerous, if they deferr'd it; ſo that they went clear away: Which being all he deſir'd, he return'd, as ſoon as he ſaw them in their Long-boat, which they row'd to their Ship, that lay at Anchor ſome Diſtance from the Rocks.

Theſe Wretches being gone, he returns Heaven Thanks for his Deliverance; and as his Bridge had favour'd their coming, he pulls it off, and only laid it over when he had a Mind to view the Sea, and goes home to eat a Bit, having not, as yet, broken his Faſt. Having, therefore, eaten ſome of his Roots and Cheeſe, and being wearied with hunting thoſe Boors, he conſults how to lie, his Bed and Bedding being gone, as alſo his Winter-gown, and the Nights being, as yet, cold: However, after a ſmall time of Conſideration, he concludes to lie in the Lodge,

which was left vacant by the ſtolen Antelopes Abſence; whoſe Litter being made of the ſame Graſs as his Mats were, he lay both ſoft and warm.

When laid down, being ſorely fatigu'd, he ſoon fell aſleep; and as the Plunderers had the preceding Day took up his Cares, they fill'd his Mind in the Night: He has them continually before his Eyes, ſometimes with his beloved Antelopes in their pilfering Hands; at other times barbarouſly haling them by their Horns with a Halter, which they ought to have about their own Necks. Theſe Acts of Auſterity provoking his Anger, and urging him on to Revenge, he lifts his Staff, which on a ſudden is turn'd into *Hercules*'s Club: Startled to ſee that wonderful Change, he ſtops from laying on the intended Blow: Reſcuing, ſaid he, my darling Animals, I ſhall loſe my precious and ineſtimable Peace of Mind: What can atone for the Life of a Man? Whilſt he was making theſe Reflections, the Men got clear away with the Fowls and Antelopes, leaving him in deep Melancholy: Thus, as he was bewailing his Loſs, calling to mind the agreeable Paſtimes they had often been to him, and the many anxious Hours he had diſpers'd with their Diverſion, a Gentlewoman appear'd before him, of a moſt agreeable, yet grave Countenance, dreſs'd in plain Dove-colour'd Cloaths, in moſt Places threadbare, and in others patch'd with divers ſorts of Stuffs, yet genteel and becoming. He ſtarts at her appearing, wondering what ſhe could come for, having nothing more to loſe: I come not, ſaid ſhe, to ſeek aught from thee, but to reſtore what thou haſt loſt. He, being overjoy'd at the Words, looks about, expecting his beloved Antelopes, and what elſe the Men had taken away; but, ſeeing nothing, he thought that Viſion proceeded from Vapours, which the great Grief for his late Loſs had occaſion'd; and falls

falls a thinking, till he was a ſecond time interrupted by her, bidding him look her in the Face. Be ſatisfied, be ſatisfied, Woman, ſaid he: Why, I neither know thee, nor what thou meaneſt. Well then, reply'd ſhe, I'll inform thee of both: I am Patience, whom all the World ſtrive to grieve, and whom none can provoke; and what I promiſe to reſtore thee is Content, which thou throweſt away after worthleſs Things. So ſhe vaniſhes. At which he awakes.

Having made Reflections upon the latter Part of his Dream, the firſt Part thereof being but a Repetition of what happen'd the Days before, he makes this Application: This, ſaid he, is a Check for my diſcompoſing that Peace upon ſuch a frivolous Account, which by Providence was intended I ſhould enjoy, having ſupplied me with all Neceſſaries to maintain it: He therefore makes a Reſolution never to be vex'd, let what will happen; but with Patience ſubmit to the Will of GOD, who has the Direction of all Things. Then, having paid his uſual Devotion, he goes into the Kitchen, in order to breakfaſt, and afterwards to take his cuſtomary Walk. Whilſt he was eating, there aroſe a Noiſe in the Air, as proceeding from a Quantity of Rooks, Jackdaws, Crows, and ſuch-like Birds, whoſe common Notes he was acquainted with; and as the Noiſe approach'd, he had the Curioſity to go and ſee what was the Matter, but was prevented by the coming of a large Fowl, which flew over his Head, as he was going out: He turn'd back to gaze at the Bird, whoſe Beauty ſeiz'd him with Admiration; the Pleaſure of ſeeing ſo charming a Creature quite put out of his Mind the Curioſity of looking from whence proceeded the diſagreeable Noiſe without; which ceaſing as ſoon as the Bird was ſhelter'd, made him imagine thoſe Carrion Birds

had been chaſing that beautiful Fowl, which, ſeeing itſelf out of Danger, ſtood ſtill, very calm and compos'd; which gave him the Opportunity of making a Diſcuſſion of every individual Agreement which compos'd ſo delightful an Object: It was about the Bigneſs and Form of a Swan, almoſt headed like it, only the Bill was not ſo long, nor ſo broad, and red like Coral; his Eyes like thoſe of a Hawk, his Head of a Mazarine-blue, and on the Top of it a Tuft of ſhining gold-colour'd Feathers, which ſpread over it, hanging near three Inches beyond, all round; its Breaſt, Face, and Part of its Neck, Milk-white, curiouſly ſpeckled with ſmall black Spots, a Gold-colour'd Circle about it; its Back and Neck behind of a fine Crimſon, ſpeckled with Purple; its Legs and Feet the ſame Colour as its Bill; its Tail long and round, ſpreading like that of a Peacock, compos'd of ſix Rows of Feathers, all of different Colours, which made a moſt delightful Mixture.

Having ſpent ſeveral Minutes in admiring the Bird, he lays Peas, and crumbled Roots, both roaſted and boil'd, before it; as alſo, Water in a Shell, withdrawing to give it Liberty to eat and drink; and ſtood out peeping to ſee what it would do: Which, being alone, having look'd about, picks a few Peas, and drinks heartily; then walks towards the Door, in a compos'd and eaſy Manner, much like that of a Cock.

Quarll, being at the Outſide, was dubious whether he ſhould detain him, or let him go; his Affection for that admirable Creature equally prompts him to both: He cannot bear the Thoughts of parting with ſo lovely an Object, nor harbour that of depriving it of its Liberty, which it ſo implicitly intruſted him withal. Thus, after a ſmall Pauſe, Generoſity prevails over Self-pleaſure: Why ſhould I, ſaid he, make the Place of its Refuge its Priſon?

He

He therefore makes Room for it to go, which, with a ſlow Pace, walks out; and, having look'd about a ſmall time, mounts up to a conſiderable Height, and then takes its Courſe North-weſt.

The Bird being gone out of Sight, he made Reflections on the Adventure, which he judges to be a Prognoſtic of ſome Rebellion or Revolution in *Europe:* Whereupon, having recommended his native Country to the Protection of Heaven, begging a Continuation of Peace, and an End of thoſe unhappy Diviſions, which often prove the Ruin of Nations; he goes and ſets down, in his Memorial-book, the Tranſactions of that Year, being 1689. and the 15th ſince his being in the Iſland, which prov'd more fruitful in Events than any of the preceding. The Picture, which he had drawn of the terrible Sea-monſter, being againſt his Wall, having accuſtom'd him to the frightful Object that conſtantly diſturb'd his Mind, he draws that of the two Ruffians, committing their Barbarity, and hangs it by the Place; the Idea whereof being to him more terrible than the preceding, he could not ſuffer it to be long in his Sight; but takes it down, and draws, on the Back-ſide of it, the Villains on a Gibbet: Now, ſaid he, this being what ought to be the End and Explanation of the Hiſtory, ſhall now be the right Side of the Picture.

There happening nothing, the Remainder of the Year, worthy of Record, he employs it in his cuſtomary Occupations; as pruning and watering his Lodge and Dairy, making his Mats to lie on, as alſo his Winter-garb; every Day milking his Antelopes and Goats; making now-and-then Butter and Cheeſe, attending his Nets, and ſuch-like neceſſary Employments.

The meantime, the *French* Mariners, who, probably, got Money by what they had taken from him

the

the Year before, returned, it being much about the ſame Seaſon; and, being reſolved to take him away, and all they could make any-thing of, out of the Iſland, were provided with Hands and Implements to accompliſh their Deſign; as Ropes to bind what they could get alive, and Guns to ſhoot what they could not come at, Saws and Hatchets to cut down Logwood and Brazil, Pick-axes and Shovels to dig up Orris-roots and others of Worth, which they imagined the Iſland produced; likewiſe flat-bottom'd Boats to tow in ſhallow Water, where others could not come; and thus by degrees to load their Ship with Booty: But ever-watchful Providence blaſted their evil Projects, and confounded their Devices, at the very Inſtant they thought themſelves ſure of Succeſs: The Implements in a flat-bottom'd Boat were tow'd to the very Foot of the Rock, by a young Fellow; who, being lighter than a Man, was thought fitteſt to go with the Tools, which pretty well loaded the Boat.

Their Materials being landed, to their great Satisfaction, the Men on board embarked in two more of the ſame ſort of Boats; but were no ſooner in 'em, but a Storm aroſe, which daſh'd their ſlender Bottom to Pieces, and waſhed them into the Sea, in which they periſh'd, overſetting alſo the flat-bottom'd Boat on Shore, with the Load, and Lad underneath it.

The Storm being over, which laſted from about eight in the Morning, till almoſt twelve at Noon, *Quarll*, according to his Cuſtom, went to ſee if he could perceive any Damage done by the late Tempeſt, and if any, diſtreſs'd by it, ſtood in want of Help.

Being at that Side of the Rock he uſed to viſit, he could ſee nothing but a few Fiſhes and Shells the Sea had left in the Clifts: If this, ſaid he, be all the

the Damage that has been done, make me thankful! it will recruit me with freſh Fiſh and Utenſils. Going on to the N. W. Part, where he ſees a batter'd Boat, floating, with the Keel upwards, This, ſaid he, boads ſome Miſchief; but thought it not to be of any Conſequence. Having gone about fifty Yards further, he 'ſpies a ſmall Barrel at the Foot of the Rock, with ſeveral Planks and Fragments of a Ship, floating with the Tide: Alas! ſaid he, theſe are too evident Proofs of a Shipwreck, to hope otherwiſe. As he was looking about, he hears a Voice cry out, much like that of a Man, at ſome Diſtance behind a Part of the Rock: Being advanc'd a ſmall matter beyond where he was, Heaven be prais'd! ſaid he, there is ſomebody, whom I am luckily come to ſave, and he moſt fortunately come to be my Companion: I cannot but rejoice at the Event, tho' I heartily grieve for the Accident. Haſtening to the Place where he thought the Cries came from, which, as he advanc'd, he could diſcern to be too ſhrill for a Man's Voice, Certainly, ſaid he, this muſt be ſome Woman by the Noiſe. This ſets his Blood a glowing; his Heart alters its Motion: Now, ſaid he, joyful, Providence has completed my Happineſs: I ſhall have a Companion, and a Help-mate; and goes on with freſh Vigour, as tho' he had recovered his Strength, and got new Limbs: The rough and ſavage Rock, which was before, in a manner, inacceſſible, is now made eaſy to walk: He climbs the high Places with Activity, and goes down the ſteep as nimbly; and ſoon arrives where he judg'd the Perſon to be: Yet, ſeeing nothing, but what he took to be a Cheſt, began to be diſhearten'd: Sure, ſaid he, this is not a ſecond Illuſion, to decoy my Fancy after what is not to be had! Thus his Joy on a ſudden turned into a deep Melancholy; but the Creature underneath, who, having

ing heard ſome Noiſe near at hand, ceas'd crying, to liſten; yet, ſeeing nobody come, cries out again, ſomewhat louder than before.

This reviv'd him quite, and recals his Hopes: It is a Woman, ſaid he, and in that Cheſt; when, going to break it open, he ſtops on a ſudden: What am I going to do? How do I know the Cauſe of her being thus lock'd up? Tho' Women are, in a manner, become a Merchandize, yet they never are pack'd up, or cheſted: She muſt be in there for a Puniſhment, which in ſome Countries is inflicted on Witches. The Boy, who heard a Voice, calls out in *French*; which *Quarll* not underſtanding, he was afraid to let it out; but his mentioning *Chriſt* being intelligible to him, made him change his Opinion: For *Chriſt*'s ſake, doth ſhe ſay? That holy Name Witches ſeldom make uſe of; however, in that Name I'll let her out. If ſhe be under Condemnation, was I not ſo? Had ſhe by Heaven been decreed to die, ſhe would not have been here. At which Words, with his Staff he endeavour'd to break that which he took to be the Lid of the Cheſt, but prov'd the Bottom; and, as he was ſtriking, the Boy underneath, calling to him to turn it up, thruſt his Hand under the Side; which he perceiving, tho' he underſtood him not, ſtood ſtill: Finding his Miſtake, This, ſaid he, is a flat-bottom'd Boat, ſuch as the *Frenchmen* us'd the Year before, when they came and plunder'd me: Now am I ſafe, if I turn it up? Doubtleſs they are come in great Numbers. Pauſing awhile, and the Lad (whom he took to be a Woman) ſtill continuing his Moan, he was mov'd to Compaſſion; and, having conſider'd the Boat could not hold any great Number, he ventures: Let what will come on it, or who will be under, for the poor Woman's ſake I'll relieve them; there cannot be many Men. However, I'll let but one out at a time:

time: If he be miſchievous, I am able to deal with him. At this, he puts the End of his Staff where he had ſeen the Hand, and lifts it up about a Foot from the Ground: Out of the Opening immediately creeps the Boy, who on his Knees falls a begging and weeping, expecting Death every Moment, as being the merited Puniſhment for the evil Purpoſe he was come about. *Quarll*, who expected there was a Woman beſides, fearing the Gap the Youth came out at would be too uneaſy for her to come through, made Motions for the Boy to help him, in order to ſet the Boat on its Bottom; which he did. *Quarll*, ſeeing the Implements inſtead of the Woman, was as much vex'd as diſappointed: His Countenance changes; ſometimes he looks at the Things, and then at the Boy; who, ſeeing him appear angry, thought of nothing but preſent Death, and again falls on his Knees, holding up his Hands, almoſt drown'd in Tears, begging for Mercy in ſuch a moving Manner, that *Quarll* could not forbear ſhedding ſome Tears; and tho' the late Diſappointment of his propos'd Happineſs, and the Sight of the Preparations made for his intended Ruin, had mov'd him to Anger againſt that mercenary Nation; he helps the young Fellow up by the Hand; and, the Night coming on apace, he takes one of the Hatchets that lay by, and gave another to the Boy; then falls a knocking the Boat to pieces, and directed him to do the ſame; which he accordingly did.

The Boat being demoliſh'd, they carried the Boards up higher on the Rock, as alſo the reſt of the Things; leſt, in the Night, ſome Storm ſhould riſe, which might waſh them back into the Sea; it being then too late to bring them away. Having done, they each of them took up what they could carry, and ſo went home. The young *Frenchman*,

man, finding a kinder Treatment, than either he deſerved or expected, was extraordinary ſubmiſſive and tractable; which made *Quarll* the more kind and mild; and, inſtead of condemning his evil Attempt, he commiſerated his Misfortune, and in room of Reſentment ſhew'd him Kindneſs: Thus, having given him of what he had to eat, he puts him to Bed in the Lodge, wherein he lay, till he had got his Mats made up; then went to Bed himſelf, but could not ſleep for thinking of his late Diſappointment, which intercepted thoſe Pleaſures he ſo much depended on, thinking himſelf ſure of a Female Partner, who, in ſharing Happineſs with him, would have much added to his Bliſs.

Having toſs'd and tumbled a conſiderable time, he begins to be heavy-ſpirited; Nature is fatigu'd, and muſt be refreſh'd: Thus he falls aſleep; and, as his Hopes the preceding Day had indulged his Deſires, his Mind is ſo impreſs'd in the Night with the Idea of the Female Object, that he dreams he has her by his Side, condoling her for the Dangers ſhe has gone thro', congratulating her lucky Eſcape, and greeting her happy Arrival into ſo bleſſed an Abode.

Thus expreſſing his Joy, in poſſeſſing the only Object which could complete his Happineſs, with all the Softneſs and Eloquence the moſt paſſionate Love can impreſs, he reaches out his Arms to embrace the lovely Phantom his Inclination had bred in his Imagination; but, having groped awhile, and finding nothing, he ſtarts out of his Sleep at this moſt ſhocking Diſappointment.

Being awak'd, the late deluſive Pleaſures called to his Mind the real, which he had formerly enjoy'd, and which he then did hanker after: What is Man, ſaid he, without that Part of himſelf, out of which God made him a Mate? *Adam*, tho' poſſeſſing all the

the World, was ſtill wanting, till he had a Woman to keep him Company: In this melancholy Diſpoſition he again falls aſleep, and dreams afreſh; in which his Imagination gluts his Inclination with thoſe Pleaſures it ſo much deſired: Fruition, to him, is but like Liquor to a Man ſick of a violent Fever, which only for a Minute quenches his Heat, but augments the Diſtemper, and at laſt deſtroys the Patient: Exceſſive Love is but ſhort-liv'd; what is violent is not laſting; Time with Pleaſure runs faſt away, but dwells long with Sorrow; Cares weaken Love, and Indifferences breed Diſcontent; then Jarrings follow, which introduce Diviſion, the Mother of Poverty.

Theſe diſmal Accidents, incumbent to unconſiderate Love, coming into the amorous Dreamer's Mind, his great Heat being quench'd, he took time to conſider his Condition; and, ſeeing himſelf liable to them, is ſtruck with ſuch a Fear as blots all Pleaſures out of his Thoughts, and fills them with Dread of future Cares, which he unadviſedly run himſelf into, and all for the Sake of a ſhort Pleaſure.

Starting out of his Sleep at the Approach of thoſe ſad Troubles, he returns Heaven Thanks, that it was but a Dream; and begs Pardon for having given ſo much way to the Concupiſcence of Fleſh; getting up, tho' ſooner than ordinary, leſt he ſhould fall aſleep, and dream again of Women.

Having walk'd about till he thought it time for the Boys to riſe, he calls him up, and takes him to the Place that he uſually went every Morning and Evening to ſing Pſalms; where the Youth being come, and hearing ſo many different Voices, and ſeeing nobody, was ſcar'd out of his Wits, and took to his Heels, making towards the Rock as faſt as he could; but as he was not acquainted with the eaſi-

eſt

eſt and moſt practicable Parts thereof, *Quarll* had made an End of his Pſalm, and overtook him before he could get to the Sea-ſide, into which he certainly would have caſt himſelf, at the Fright; but *Quarll*, who, by the Boy's ſtaring, gueſs'd his Diſorder, not having the Benefit of the Language, endeavour'd to calm him by his pleaſing Countenance, and prevented his drowning himſelf; but could not keep off a violent Fit the Fright had occaſion'd, which held him ſeveral Minutes.

The Fit being over, he and the Boy took away, at divers times, the Remains of the Cheſt, and of what was in it, which they could not carry home the Day before: Then taking up two Guns, Now, ſaid he, theſe unlucky Inſtruments, which were intended for Deſtruction, ſhall be employ'd for the Preſervation of that they were to deſtroy. Taking them to his Lodge, he ſets them at each Side of the Door; then, being Dinner-time, he ſtrikes a Light, and ſets the Boy to make a Fire, whilſt he made ſome of the Fiſh fit to fry, which he pick'd up upon the Rock the Evening before; then takes Dripping, he ſav'd when he roaſted any Fleſh, to fry them with. The Boy, who had liv'd ſome time in *Holland*, where they uſe much Butter, ſeeing Dripping employ'd in room thereof, thought to pleaſe his Maſter in making ſome; and as he had ſeen Milk and Cream in the Dairy-arbour, wanting a Churn only, there being a ſmall Rundlet lying by empty, he takes one of the Ends of it, in which, the next Day, he beat Butter.

Quarll, ſeeing the Youth induſtrious, begins to fanſy him, notwithſtanding the Averſion he had conceiv'd for his Nation, ever ſince the ill Treatment he had receiv'd from his Countrymen; and, as Speech is one of the moſt neceſſary Faculties to breed

breed and maintain Fellowſhip, he took Pains to teach him *Engliſh*.

The Lad, being acute and ingenious, was ſoon made to underſtand it, and in ſix Months capable to ſpeak it ſufficiently, ſo as to give his Maſter a Relation of his late coming, and to what Intent. The Men, ſaid he, who about one Year ſince carried away from hence ſome Antelopes, with extraordinary Ducks, and ſeveral Rarities, which they ſaid belonged to a monſtrous *Engliſh* Hermit, whoſe Hair and Beard cover'd all his Body, having got a great deal of Money by ſhewing them, encouraged others to come; whereupon ſeveral, joining together, hir'd a Ship to fetch away the Hermit, and what elſe they could find; therefore brought with them Tools, and Guns to ſhoot what they could not take alive. Barbarous Wretches! reply'd he, to kill my dear Antelopes and Ducks! Pray what did they intend to do with me? Why, ſaid the Boy, to make a Shew of you. To make a Shew of me! Sordid Wretches! Is a Chriſtian then ſuch a Rarity amongſt them? Well, and what were the Saws and Hatchets for? To cut down your Houſe, which they intended to make a Drinking-booth of. Ho, monſtrous! what Time and Nature have been fifteen Years in completing, they would have ruin'd in a Moment: Well, Thanks to Providence, their evil Deſign is averted. Pray, what is become of thoſe ſacrilegious Perſons? They are all drown'd, ſaid the Boy. Then, replies he, the Heavens are ſatisfy'd, and I aveng'd: But how cameſt thou to eſcape? for thou waſt with them. No, reply'd the Youth; I was upon the Rock when their Boat was daſh'd againſt it, and was overſet with the ſame Sea, under the flat-bottom'd Boat, where you found me. That was a happy Overſet for thee. Well, is there no Gratitude due to Providence for thy Eſcape?

Eſcape? Due to Providence! ſaid he, why, I thought You had ſav'd me: I'm ſure You let me out. Yes, reply'd *Quarll*; but I was ſent by Providence for that Purpoſe. That was kindly done too, ſaid the Boy: Well, when I ſee him, I will thank him: Doth he live hereabout? Poor ignorant Creature! replied *Quarll*; why, Providence is every-where: What! didſt thou never hear of Providence? What Religion art thou? Religion! anſwer'd the Youth; I don't know what you mean: I am a Fiſherman by Trade, which my Father liv'd by. Well, ſaid *Quarll*, did he teach thee nothing elſe? no Prayers? Prayers! reply'd the Lad; why, Fiſhermen have no time to pray; that's for them who have nothing elſe to do: Poor Folk muſt work, and get Money; that's the Way of our Town. Covetous Wretches! Well, ſaid he, I grudge them not what they poſſeſs, ſince it is all the Happineſs they aſpire at; but thou ſhalt learn to pray, which will be of far more Advantage to thee than Work, both here and hereafter: From which time he begins to teach him the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments; as alſo the Principles of the Chriſtian Religion; all which Inſtructions the Youth taking readily, won his Affection the more: He likewiſe taught him to ſing Pſalms, which farther qualified him to be his Companion in ſpiritual Exerciſes, as well as in temporal Occupations.

Now, having Company, he is oblig'd to enlarge his Bed, the Lodge being wanting for his Antelopes againſt Breeding-time: He adds, therefore, to his Mats. His other Proviſions alſo wanting to be augmented, and he having both Tools and Boards, out of the flat Boat which he had taken to pieces; he and the Lad went about making large Boxes to ſalt Fleſh and Fiſh in; then, with the Boards that were

were left, they made a Table for his Dwelling that he had before, and one for his Kitchen; as alſo Shelves in the room of thoſe that were made of Wicker: Then, having recruited his Shell-utenſils, that were ſtolen the Year before, he was completely furniſh'd with all manner of Conveniencies; and, Providence ſupplying him daily with other Neceſſaries, there was no room left him for Wiſhes, but for Thankſgiving, which they daily moſt religiouſly paid.

In this moſt happy State they liv'd in Peace and Concord the Space of ten Years, unanimouſly doing what was to be done, as it lay in each of their Ways, without relying on one another.

Quarll, who before, tho' alone, and depriv'd of Society (the principal Comfort of Life), thought himſelf bleſs'd, now cannot expreſs his Happineſs, there being none in the World to be compar'd to it, heartily praying he might find no Alteration till Death: But the young Man, not having met with ſo many Diſappointments in the World as he, had not quite withdrawn his Affections from it; his Mind ſometimes will run upon his native Country, where he has left his Relations, and where he cannot help wiſhing to be himſelf: Thus, Opportunity offering itſelf one Day, as he went to get Oyſters, to make Sawce for ſome freſh Cod-fiſh which *Quarll* was dreſſing, he ſaw, at a Diſtance, a Ship; at which his Heart fell a panting; his Pulſes double their Motion; his Blood grows warmer and warmer, till at laſt, inflamed with Deſire of getting at it, he lays down the Bag he brought to put the Oyſters in, as alſo the Inſtrument to dredge them up with, and takes to ſwimming. The Men on board, having 'ſpy'd him out, ſent their Boat to take him up; ſo he went away without taking his Leave of him he had receiv'd ſo much Good from; who, having waited

waited a conſiderable time, fearing ſome Accident would befal him, leaves his Cooking, and goes to ſee for him; and, being come at the Place where he was to get the Oyſters, he ſees the Bag and Inſtrument lie, and nobody with them. Having call'd ſeveral times, without being anſwer'd, various racking Fears tortur'd his Mind: Sometimes he doubts he is fallen in ſome Hole in the Rock, there being many near that Place where the Oyſters were: He therefore with his Staff, which he always carried with him when he went Abroad, at the other Side of the Rock grabbled in every one round the Place; and, feeling nothing, he concludes ſome Sea-monſter had ſtolen him away; and, weeping, condemns himſelf as the Cauſe of this fatal Accident; reſolving, for the future, to puniſh himſelf by denying his Appetite; and only eat to ſupport Nature, and not to pleaſe his Palate.

Having given over Hopes of getting him again, he returns Home in the greateſt of Afflictions, reſolving to faſt till that time the next Day; but, happening to look Weſtward, in which was the Point the Wind ſtood, he perceives ſomething like a Boat at a great Diſtance: Wiping the Tears off his Eyes, and looking ſtedfaſtly, he diſcovers a Sail beyond it, which quite alter'd the Motive of his former Fear: No Monſter, ſaid he, hath devour'd him; 'tis too plain a Caſe, that he has villainouſly left me: But what could I expect of his Son, who had projected ſuch Evil againſt me? So ſaying, he went Home, and made an End of dreſſing his Dinner; and afterwards hangs up the Picture which he had taken down upon his Account, being the true Emblem of what he deſerv'd; reſting himſelf contented, being but as he was before, and rather better; ſince he had more Conveniencies, and Tools to till his Ground, and dig up his Roots with. Having recommended

commended himſelf to Providence, he reſumes his uſual Works and Recreations, reſolving that no Cares ſhould mar his Happineſs for the future, being out of all thoſe irreſiſtible Temptations Way, in which the World abounds, and daily lays the beſt Mens Hopes in the Duſt.

Being again alone, the whole Buſineſs of the Houſe lies upon his Hands; he now muſt prune and trim his Habitation, that daily harbours him, being made of fine growing Plants, which yearly ſhoot out young Branches: This makes 'em grow out of Shape. He muſt alſo till the Ground; ſet and gather his Peas and Beans in their Seaſon; milk and feed his Antelopes daily; make Butter and Cheeſe at proper Times; dig up his Roots; fetch in Fuel and Water, when wanted; attend his Nets; go Eagle-neſting; and every Day dreſs his own Victuals: All which neceſſary Occupations, beſides the Time dedicated for Morning and Evening Devotions, kept him wholly employ'd; which made his renew'd Solitude leſs irkſome. And, having walked all that Afternoon to divert his Thoughts, admiring all the Way the wonderful Works of Nature, both in the ſurpriſing Rocks which ſurrounded the Iſland, and in the delightful Creatures, and admirable Plants, that are in it; being weary with walking, he returns home, thanking kind Providence for ſettling him in ſo bleſſed a Place, and in his Way calls at his inviſible Choir; where, having ſung a Thankſgiving-Pſalm, and his uſual Evening-Hymn, he goes to Supper, and then to Bed, with a thoroughly contented Mind; which occaſions pleaſant Dreams, to entertain his Thoughts.

During his Sleep, his Fancy is delighted with being in Nature's Garden of Pleaſure, where none but her Friends are permitted to enter.

The Place appear'd very ſpacious, and of an admirable Form; full of all Sorts of Nature's Works, both Animals, Vegetables, and Minerals, every individual Thing in Perfection: And tho' ſome were diſtant, yet all appear'd as at hand.

The lofty Trees, which ſtood on a level Ground, cover'd with curious Graſs, embalm'd with many different-colour'd Flowers, exceeding in Beauty any Carpet that the moſt expert Artiſt could make, ſpread their branchy Arms over Creatures of all Kinds, which lay beneath their delightful Shades: There the bold Lion lies by the innocent Lamb; the fierce Panther near the harmleſs Sheep; the ravenous Wolf with the mild Goat; Leopard and Deer, Tyger and Hare, repos'd together in Peace; on the Trees, Eagles, Vulturs, Falcons, and Hawks, quietly perched with the Turtle and the Dove.

Theſe moſt agreeable Objects, join'd with the delightful Noiſe of the Fountains falling into their Baſons, and the purling Streams running their Courſe, together with the various harmonious Notes of divers Kinds of Singing-birds, put him into an Ecſtaſy: Sure, ſaid he, this is the Garden of *Eden*, out of which unfortunate *Adam* was caſt after his Fall, as being a Dwelling only for Innocence.

Having walk'd a little Way, there being on every Side curious Lanes, every one affording new Objects of Admiration, he comes to a Walk, edg'd with Orange and Lemon-trees, full of Fruit and Bloſſoms, at the Foot of which was a narrow Bank border'd with Jonquils, Tuberoſes, Iacinths, and other delightful Flowers, both for Sight and Smell: At the End of it there was an Arbour of the ſame, but ſo beautiful, that at firſt Sight he took it for a Tapeſtry the moſt expert Artiſt had exerted himſelf in making, to ſhew the Curioſity of Trade, and Greatneſs of his Skill: In it there ſat three Ladies of

of uncommon Beauty; the middlemoſt, who was the luſtieſt, appear'd to be the eldeſt, being of a moſt ſedate Countenance, a moderate Number of Years having both eſtabliſh'd her Judgment, and ſettled her Features: She, at her Right-hand, ſeem'd to be of a weaker Conſtitution; ſhe had in her Hand an Olive-branch bearing Fruit, which, when gathered, was immediately ſucceeded with Bloſſoms; ſo that it never was without the one or the other: The Lady, who ſat on the Left-ſide, was more jolly and gay, yet look'd ſomewhat careful: She had in her Hand a long Veſſel, broad at one End, and ſharp at the other, like a Horn, bending towards the Point full of all ſorts of Fruits.

Having ſtood ſtill a ſhort Space of Time, looking at thoſe Ladies, thinking it ill Manners to interrupt their Converſation; they, perceiving his Modeſty would not permit him to advance, roſe up, and went another Way, to give him the Opportunity of viewing the Garden: He, accordingly, went quite round, till come to the Place where he had begun his Walk; where he ſaw a ſtately Cock, of an extraordinary Size, ſtrutting from Animal to Animal, taking from moſt of them ſomething, whilſt they were aſleep; which having ſecur'd, he falls a crowing in ſuch a loud Manner, that he ſtartled all the other Creatures; which, being awake, and every one miſſing ſomething, challenged him with it: But he, having crow'd a ſecond time in an inſulting and daring manner, ſtrutted moſt haughtily away; at which the Loſers, being much offended, conſulted together on Means to retake by Force, what he had in ſo clandeſtine a Manner taken from them; chuſing the Lion for their Director: But the watchful Cock, which, whilſt they were indulging themſelves, had carefully made ſufficient Proviſion to maintain what he had done, bid them all Defiance.

There happening a great Noiſe of Squeeling, it wak'd him out of his Dream; and his Mind being impreſs'd with Notions of War, it at firſt ſeiz'd him with Terror: But being ſomewhat ſettled, and the Noiſe ſtill continuing, he perceiv'd it proceeded from the two different Kinds of Monkeys in the Iſland, which were fighting for the Wild Pomgranates that the high Wind had ſhook off the Trees the preceding Night, which was very boiſterous.

Having gueſs'd the Occaſion of their Debate, he gets up, in order to go and quell their Difference, by dividing amongſt them the Cauſe thereof: Getting up, he opens the Door, at the Outſide of which an old Monkey, of each ſort, were quietly waiting his Levée, to entice him to come, as he once before did, and put an End to their bloody War.

He was not a little ſurpris'd to ſee two ſuch inveterate Enemies, who at other times never meet without fighting, at that Juncture agree ſo well.

That moſt ſurpriſing Sign of Reaſon in thoſe Brutes, which, knowing his Deciſion would compoſe their Comrades Difference, came to implore it, put him upon theſe Reflections: Would Princes, ſaid he, be but reaſonable, as thoſe which by Nature are irrational, how much Blood and Money would be ſaved! Having admired the Uneaſineſs of thoſe poor Creatures, which ſtill went a few Steps forward, and then backward to him; he was in Hopes to decoy one or both into his Lodge, by throwing Meat to them: But thoſe exemplary Animals, hearing their Fellows in Trouble, had no regard to their ſeparate Intereſt, taking no notice of what he gave them; but kept moving to-and-again with all the Tokens of Uneaſineſs they could expreſs: Which ſo mov'd him, that he haſten'd to the Place; where his Preſence caus'd immediately a Ceſſation of Arms, and each Party mov'd a conſiderable

ſiderable Diſtance off each other, waiting his ſharing the Wind-falls; which being done, they quietly took that Heap which lay next each Kind, and went to their different Quarters.

This Accident, which in ſome manner made out his Dream of Wars, brought it alſo freſh into his Mind, which was full of Cares about his Country, which he much fear'd, if any ſhould happen in *Europe*, would be involv'd therein; and, calling to Remembrance the indigent Diſpoſition he left it in, he fear'd it would lay it open to ſome uſurping Prince's Power: But, leſt further Speculation ſhould occaſion evil Prognoſtication to diſturb his Peace, he leaves the Event of all Things to the Direction of Providence, and goes home to ſet down his Dream, and the Year he dream'd it, which was in 1690.

Fourteen Years more being paſt, every thing keeping its natural Courſe, there happened nothing extraordinary, each ſucceeding Year renewing the Pleaſures the preceding had produced: Thunders and high Winds being frequent, tho' not equally violent, he thought it not material to record them, or their Effects; as blowing and throwing Fiſhes, Shells, empty Veſſels, batter'd Cheſts, *&c.* upon the Rock; only Tranſactions and Events wonderful and uncommon: And there happen'd a moſt ſurpriſing one a few Days after, which, tho' of no great Moment, is as worthy of Record as any of far greater Concern; being a wonderful Effect of Providence, manifeſted in a miraculous Manner, tho' not to be ſaid ſupernatural.

One Morning, when he had roaſted a Parcel of thoſe Roots which he uſed to eat inſtead of Bread, and this he commonly did once a Week, it eating beſt when ſtale; having ſpread them on his Table and Cheſt to cool, he went out to walk, leaving his Door open, to let the Air in.

His Walk, tho' graced with all the Agreeables Nature could adorn it with, to make it delightful; a Graſs Carpet, imbroider'd with beautiful Flowers, of many different Colours and Smells, under his Feet, to tread on; before, and on each Side of him, fine lofty Trees, of various Forms and Heights, cloathed with pleaſant green Leaves, trimmed with rich Bloſſoms of many Colours, to divert his Eye; a Number of ſeveral ſorts of melodious Singing-birds perching in their moſt lovely Shades, as tho' Nature had ſtudied to excel Man's brighteſt Imagination, and Exquiſiteneſs of Art: Yet all theſe Profuſeneſſes of Nature's Wonders are not ſufficient to keep away or expel anxious Thoughts from his Mind. It runs upon his Two dear Antelopes, the darling Heads of his preſent Stock, which he took ſuch Care to bring up, and were become ſo engaging, always attending him in theſe fine Walks; adding, by their ſwift Races, active Leapings, and other uncommon Diverſions, to the natural Pleaſantneſs of the Place; which now, by their moſt lamented Abſence, is become a dull *Memorandum* of the barbarous Manner in which they were raviſhed away from him.

In theſe melancholy Thoughts, which his Loneſomeneſs every now-and-then created, he returns home, where Providence had left a Remedy for his Grievance: A Companion, far exceeding any he ever had, waits his Return; which was, a beautiful Monkey of the fineſt Kind, and the moſt complete of the Sort, as tho' made to manifeſt the unparalleled Skill of Nature, is ſent him, by Providence, to diſſipate his Melancholy.

Being come to his Lodge, and beholding that wonderful Creature, and in his own Poſſeſſion, at the fartheſt End of it, and him at the Entrance thereof, to oppoſe its Flight, if offered, he is at once

once filled with Joy and Admiration: Long, ſaid he, I endeavoured in vain to get one, and would have been glad of any, though of the worſt Kind, and even the meaneſt of the Sort; and here kind Providence has ſent me one of an unparalleled Beauty.

Having a conſiderable time admired the Beaſt, which all the while ſtood unconcern'd, now-and-then eating of the Roots that lay before him, he ſhuts the Door, and goes in, with a Reſolution of ſtaying within all Day, in order to tame him, which he hoped would be no difficult Matter, his Diſpoſition being already pretty familiar; little thinking, that Providence, who ſent him thither, had already qualified him for the Commiſſion he bore; which having found out by the Creature's ſurpriſing Docility, he returns his Benefactor his moſt hearty Thanks for that miraculous Gift.

This moſt wonderful Animal having, by its ſurpriſing Tractability, and Good-nature, joined to its matchleſs Handſomeneſs, gained its Maſter's Love, beyond what is uſual to place on any ſort of Beaſts; he thought himſelf doubly recompenſed for all his former Loſſes, eſpecially for that of his late ungrateful Companion; who, notwithſtanding all the Obligations he held from him, baſely left him, at a time he might be moſt helpful: And, as he fanſied his dear *Beaufidelle* (for ſo he called that admirable Creature) had ſome ſort of Reſemblance to the Picture he framed of him, he takes it down, thinking it unjuſt to bear in his Sight that vile Object, which could not in any-wiſe claim a Likeneſs to ſo worthy a Creature as his beloved Monkey.

One Day, as this lovely Animal was officiating the Charge it had of its own Accord taken, being gone for Wood, as wont to do when wanted, he finds in his Way a Wild Pomgranate, whoſe extra-

ordinary Size and Weight had cauſed it to fall off the Tree: He takes it home, and then returns for his Faggot; in which time *Quarll*, wiſhing the Goodneſs of the Inſide might anſwer its outward Beauty, cuts it open; and, finding it of a dull Luſciouſneſs, too flat for eating, imagined it might be uſed with Things of an acid and ſharp Taſte: Having, therefore, boiled ſome Water, he puts it into a Veſſel with a ſort of an Herb which is of the Taſte and Nature of Creſſes, and ſome of the Pomgranate, letting them infuſe ſome time, now-and-then ſtirring it; which the Monkey having taken notice of, did the ſame: But one very hot Day, happening to lay the Veſſel in the Sun, made it turn ſour.

Quarll, who very much wanted Vinegar in his Sawces, was well pleaſed with the Accident, and ſo continued the louring of the Liquor, which proveing excellent, he made a Five-gallon Veſſel of it; having ſeveral, which at times he found upon the Rock.

Having now Store of Vinegar, and being a great Lover of Pickles, which he had learnt to make by ſeeing his laſt Wife, who was an extraordinary Cook, and made of all Sorts every Year; calling to Mind he had often in his Walks ſeen ſomething like Muſhrooms, he makes it his Buſineſs to look for ſome: Thus he picked up a few, of which *Beaufidelle* (who followed him up and down) having taken notice, immediately ranges about; and, being nimbler-footed than his Maſter, and not obliged to ſtoop ſo low, picked double the Quantity in the ſame Space of Time; ſo that he ſoon had enough to ſerve him till the next Seaſon.

His good Succeſs in making that ſort of Pickle, encourages him to try another; and, having taken notice of a Plant in the Wood that bears a ſmall green

green Flower, which, before it is blown, looks like a Caper, he gathers a few; and, their Taſte and Flavour being no-ways diſagreeable, judging that, when pickled, they would be pleaſant, he tries them, which, according to his Mind, were full as good as the real ones, and gathers a ſufficient Quantity, with the Help of his Attendant; ſtocking himſelf with two as pleaſant Pickles, as different Sorts: But there is another, which he admires above all: None, to his Mind, like the Cucumber; and the Iſland producing none, left him no room to hope for any; yet (as Likeneſs is a vaſt Help to Imagination) if he could but find any-thing, which ever ſo little reſembles them in Make, Nature, or Taſte, it will pleaſe his Fancy: He therefore examines every Kind of Buds, Bloſſoms, and Seeds; having at laſt found that of a Wild Parſnep, which being long and narrow, almoſt the Bigneſs and Make of a Pickling-Cucumber, green and criſp withal, full of a ſmall flat Seed, not unlike that of the Thing he would fain have it to be, he pickles ſome of them; which being of a Colour, and near upon the Make, he fanſies them quite of the Taſte.

His Beans being at that time large enough for the firſt Crop, he gathers ſome for his Dinner: The Shells being tender, and of a delicate Green, it came into his Mind, they might be made to imitate *French* Beans: They are, ſaid he, near the Nature, I can make them quite of the Shape, ſo be they have the ſame Savour. Accordingly, he cuts them in long narrow Slips, and pickles ſome; the other Part he boils; and, there being none to contradict their Taſte, they paſſed current, for as good *French* Beans as any that ever grew.

The Diſappointment of having ſomething more comfortable than Water to drink being retrieved by producing, in the Room thereof, wherewithal to

make his Eatables more delicious, he proceeds in his firſt Project; and, taking neceſſary Care to prevent that Accident which intercepted Succeſs in his firſt Undertaking, he accompliſhes his Deſign, and makes a Liquor no-wiſe inferior to the beſt Cyder: So that now he has both to revive and keep up his Spirits, as well as to pleaſe his Palate, and ſuit his Appetite.

Having now nothing to crave or wiſh for, but rather all Motives for Content, he lies down with a peaceable Mind, no Care or Fear diſturbing his Thoughts: His Sleep is not interrupted with frightful Fancies, but rather diverted with pleaſant and diverting Dreams; he is not ſtartled at Thunder or Storms, tho' ever ſo terrible, his Truſt being on Providence, who at ſundry Times, and in various Manners, has reſcued him from Death, tho' apparently unavoidable; being for above thirty Years miraculouſly protected and maintained in a Place ſo remote from all human Help and Aſſiſtance.

Yet, notwithſtanding his Firmneſs, and whole Truſt on Providence, he is obliged to give way to the Weakneſs of his Nature; a ſtrange and ſhocking Noiſe is heard at a Diſtance in the Air, which, having reached the Place where he ſtood, covers it with Darkneſs for ſeveral Minutes; at which he is ſo alarmed, that he thinks himſelf paſt all Hopes; till, the Noiſe being ceaſed, and that which intercepted the Light diſperſed, his ſcared Senſes returning to their proper Seat, and his ſtray'd Reaſon recall'd, he is aſham'd of the Weakneſs of his Faith, and begs Pardon for his late Miſtruſt of the Continuation of Providence's Protection, who had all along given him all imaginable Reaſon to depend on it at all times: Thus, having opened his Door, he ſteps out to ſee if he could diſcover the Cauſe of the late moſt ſurpriſing and ſudden Darkneſs, in a bright Sun-

Sun-ſhining Day; which having found out by the vaſt Number of dead Birds of ſeveral Kinds, lying up and down the Ground, he was ſeized with no ſmall Amazement, tho' with leſs Fear.

From that moſt ſurpriſing Aſpect he infers, there had been a Battle of thoſe Creatures in the Air, the great Number of which had occaſioned the late Decreaſe.

Having made Reflections upon that aſtoniſhing Tranſaction, he can draw from thence no other Inference, but a Prognoſtication of dreadful Wars in *Europe*, from which he begs Heaven to protect his native Country: And leſt the dead Birds, that lay in great Numbers, ſhould (with lying) infect the Iſland, he and his Monkey carried them to the other Side of the Rock, throwing them into the Sea; only as many of them as had ſoft Feathers on their Breaſts and Bellies, he plucked away, to ſtuff a Pillow for the Beaſt, being a little too hot at Nights for it to lie upon the Bed. So having cleared the Place, and being tired with often going up and down the rugged Rock, he ſtayed at home the Remainder of the Day, and at Night goes to Bed; but, as the late Omen of approaching Evil had preoccupied his Thoughts in the Day with Cares concerning his Country, his Mind ran upon it in the Night; dreaming he ſees Wives weeping, and melting into Tears, taking their Leaves of their indulgent Huſbands; hanging, deſtitute of Strength, about their Necks, whoſe Grief weighed them to the Ground. Turning from that afflicting Object, he ſees another as ſhocking; the old Father, bathed in Tears, embracing his only Son, bidding him Farewel, and, with him, all the Comforts of this Life, and Support of his Age. Moving his Eyes from that, they light on full as bad a Sight; the tender Mother ſwooning in her dear Child's Arms, whom an inex-

orable Preſs-gang is haling away. Thus every Face expreſſing Grief for a Relation, or a Friend, not being able any longer to behold thoſe terrifying Objects, with which the Town abounded, he betakes himſelf to the Country; that, by keeping from the Afflicted, he may avoid Grief.

Having quitted the Town, he finds himſelf, on a ſudden, in a Place as full of Terrors, where he ſaw Streams of reeking Blood here-and-there; looſe Horſes kicking and prancing about; ſome dragging their late Riders by the Stirrops; others wounded, and their Guts hanging about; at a Diſtance, Crowds of Men in Flame and Smoke, confuſedly moving like Heaps of Duſt in a Whirlwind, leaving behind them, as they moved, vaſt Numbers of Men and Horſes, both dead and dying; ſome without Legs, others without Arms, and abundance with but one of each.

At a Diſtance from thence, ſome in Purſuit of their Enemies, hacking and cutting them down all the Way before them, like Wood for Fuel; others, flying from being ſlain, caſt themſelves into rapid Rivers, where they periſh by Thouſands.

As he was looking at thoſe terrible Objects, he finds himſelf, on a ſudden, ſurrounded by ruſtical Soldiers, holding their Swords and Bayonets to his Breaſt, and aſking him, in a ſurly Manner, Whether *High* or *Low?* at which being very much ſtartled, not knowing what to anſwer, nor, indeed, what they meant, he told them, He was an *Engliſhman*; which they appearing to be alſo, made him hope for better Uſage: But they ſeizing him in a violent Manner, ſaid, He might be *Engliſh*, and yet an Enemy to the Country. Then he awaked, in a wonderful Fright; but, being come to himſelf, he concludes, that his Dream proceeded from his late Surprize at the preceding Day's aſtoniſhing Tranſactions;

actions: Therefore, having again recommended his Country to Heaven's Protection, he goes about making the Bed for his Monkey, as he had concluded on before, and with ſome Sail-cloth makes a Caſe, ſtuffing it with the Feathers he had ſaved for that Purpoſe.

The Night being come, he lays the Couching, which he made for the Beaſt, by his own Bed; which very readily went to it, being very ſoft and eaſy.

And, as Cares for his Country had in the Day occupied his Thoughts, his Mind in the Night is impreſſed with the Subject, tho' not with ſo diſmal an Idea as the preceding; having ſince been diverted with ſuch Objects as removed the terrifying Aſpects, which before offered themſelves to his Imagination; which now is taken up with being in *St. James's-Park*, where he had formerly taken Pleaſure, and which he fanſies had ſince loſt many of its former Agreeableneſſes.

As he was walking, a Report was raiſed, that a certain great Perſon (who, by his late great Services to the Nation, had gained a Title to the Palace) was juſt deceaſed; having, before his Death, intailed the ſame upon a foreign Prince of great Renown: This ſurpriſing Piece of News occaſioned a ſudden Alteration in every-body's Countenance: Some looked pale with Grief, others red with Wrath; but every thing in Nature ſeemed to expreſs a Feeling for the Loſs; the Trees ſhed half their Virtues, and the Graſs withered.

This dull Scene having laſted ſome ſmall time, the Trees and Graſs recover their former Verdure, brighter than before; the lofty Oaks, which he fanſied bordered the Mall, bore fine Roſes in vaſt Number.

This

This additional Beauty in thoſe noble Plants, already ſo famed abroad for their Toughneſs and Strength, prompts People of all Nations to come and refreſh themſelves under their lofty and fragrant Shades.

Having, with great Satisfaction, admired the ſurpriſing Improvement of the Oaks, which, to his Imagination, prognoſticated Proſperity to the Nation, he walks on Northward, where he ſaw abundance of Thiſtles, which made him wonder they were permitted to grow in a Place where every-thing ought to contribute to its Agreeableneſs and Pleaſantneſs; but, having conſidered the Stoutneſs of the Plants, which denoted their being well-rooted, he judged it impoſſible to clear the Ground: Beſides, the Bees loving to ſettle on them, and probably ſucking more Honey from their Bloſſoms than any more agreeable or ſweet-ſcented Flower; for that Reaſon, he imagined they were not gathered.

Walking back again, he meets with ſeveral Noblemen, ſome with a blue Cordoon, others with green, each with a Gardening-tool in his Hand, going to turn up and till the Ground, between that where the Thiſtles grew, and that where the Oaks ſtood: He was ſtartled to ſee thoſe great Perſons, who hardly will concern themſelves with their own Lands and Poſſeſſions, labour to improve that wherein every private Perſon had a Share. He ſtood ſome time admiring their Dexterity, and Readineſs at their Work; then walks on to the Mall, which he found thronged with a Multitude of People of all Nations, every one having a Roſe in his Hand, wherewith they diverted themſelves as they walked.

Having gazed about him a conſiderable time, he had a Fancy to go and ſee how the noble Gardeners went on with their Work; where, being come, he

he finds, to his great Admiration, the Ground had been ſo wonderfully well manured, that the Oaks and Thiſtles had ſtruck their Roots through it, and met; ſo, growing together, had produced a Plant which bore both Roſes and Thiſtles, to every-body's Wonder; which made the Thiſtles ſo valued ever ſince, that there are but few great or fine Gardens, which have not more or leſs of them.

His Monkey, being ſtartled out of his Sleep in a mighty Fright, ran behind his Back ſqueaking, and awaked him in the midſt of his Amazement; being exceedingly pleaſed with his late Dream, of which he conceived a mighty good Omen to Old *England*, differing ſo very much from the preceding, both in Nature and Signification.

Thus, tho' earlier than he uſually roſe, he gets up to ſet it down, whilſt freſh in his Mind, and alſo the Year, being 1707. then takes a Walk before Breakfaſt, and the Beaſt with him; which, being not yet recovered of its late Fright, keeps cloſe to his Maſter, every now-and-then looking behind, as tho' ſtill afraid; at which *Quarll* concludes the Creature muſt needs have been diſturbed in its Sleep, the Night before, with ſome frightful Dream; which made him wonder, that an Animal void of Reaſon, and incapable of Reflection, ſhould be ſuſceptible of Imagination.

The Day being paſſed without any extraordinary Occurrence, he made no farther Remark, but followed his uſual Occupation, and then went to his Reſt, and the Monkey to his new Bed, as the Night before, which he took Care to draw as cloſe to his Maſter as he could; then, having been twice or thrice about the Room, examining every Corner, he lies down, and ſleeps quietly till the Dawning of the Morning; at which time he ſtarts up again, as the Night before.

Quarll,

Quarll, being a ſecond time awaked in the ſame Manner, and much about the ſame Hour, concludes the Cauſe muſt proceed from the Pillow, and reſolves to experiment it himſelf the next Night; at which time Crowds of terrifying Aſpects appear in his Imagination, which allure his whole Faculties, and ſet all his Senſes in an Uproar; his Eyes are taken up with frightful Objects, and his Ears filled with a terrible Noiſe; at which the reſt of his Senſes have loſt their Offices, and are become uſeleſs.

Being awake the next Morning, he finds himſelf incline to believe, that the Pillow had really ſome Influence on his Imagination; but as one Night's Experience was not a ſufficient Solution to his Inquiry in that ſupernatural Operation, having often dreamed before he uſed the Pillow; he reſolves to try it ſeveral Nights ſucceſſively; during which, his Monkey ſlept very quiet, and he as diſturbed. This works a great Way towards the Perſuaſion of what he had a ſtrong Fancy to believe: Yet, to be better ſatisfied of the Reality of it, he lays by the Pillow for three or four Nights together; during which time, both he and the Beaſt ſlept very quiet.

This added much to his Opinion, that evil Effluvia iſſued out of thoſe Feathers the Pillow was ſtuffed with; but as he formerly dreamed, and had many Nights Intermiſſion between thoſe that were entertained with Dreams, he will once more try it, before he concludes that it is ſo; thus puts it again under his Head that Night: And, as it was the laſt Experiment, it proved alſo the moſt troubleſome, he being at that time terrified with more ſhocking Objects than the preceding; which, tho' they repreſented fierce and bloody Battles to his Imagination, yet were leſs terrible to him; having not, as yet, diſcern'd his native Country engag'd therein,

therein, whom now he finds to be the principal Party concern'd, on which all Succeſs depends, and which cannot be ſtrove for without vaſt Expences, and irretrievable Loſs of his dear Countrymen; for which his Heart bled as plentifully as for thoſe whom he dream'd he ſaw in their Gore.

Having with Terror and Grief fatigu'd his Eyes with the moſt ſhocking and afflicting Effects of War, Men and Horſes lying as thick upon the Ground as Graſs in a Meadow, and Streams of Blood running like ſo many Brooks, ſupplied by a ſtrong Spring; he lifts up his Eyes to Heaven, imploring an End to that execrable Devourer of Mankind.

And, whilſt his Eyes were ſtill fixed to the Heavens, he ſees Victory ruſhing thro' thick Clouds of Obſtacles approaching to her; which having overcome, ſhe ſettled over the Army his Countrymen belong'd to, over whoſe Head ſhe ſhook and flouriſh'd her Colours, pointing at approaching Peace, attended with Plenty; but on a ſudden there aroſe an infectious Miſt out of the Ground, which cramping the *Engliſhmens* Hands, that they could no more uſe their conquering Arms, this fatal Accident having both encourag'd and ſtrengthen'd the Enemy, they fell on the unfortunate Remains of the Army, with unmerciful Fury; who, now having loſt all their Support and Dependence, were moſt cruelly cut to Pieces; at which moſt diſmal and afflicting Object, he awaked: And tho' this Dream was a ſufficient Proof of the Feathers Influence, yet he cannot be ſatisfy'd but it muſt be ominous, having ſo much Relation to the preceding; therefore ſets it down with them; and, for a more certain Conviction of what he had all Cauſe imaginable to believe, he is reſolv'd to try his Monkey once more the Night following: But the Beaſt, who had

had not yet forgot the Uneaſineſs that the Bed had cauſed him, choſe to lie on the Ground; which intirely convinced *Quarll*, that there was a malignant Quality in thoſe Feathers: Wherefore he throws them into the Sea, and fills the Caſe with a ſort of ſoft Moſs, which grew at the Bottom of a particular Tree, on which the Creature lay very quiet ever after.

And as yearly ſtripping the Eagles of their Eggs, had prevented their Increaſe, it alſo favour'd and advanc'd that of the Creatures in the Iſland, on whoſe Young they fed; ſo that the Number of the wild Monkeys being conſiderably augmented, made their Food ſcant, which caus'd them now-and-then to come and ſteal ſomewhat out of *Quarll*'s Ground. *Beaufidelle*, whoſe good Keeping and warm Lying had made him thrive in Bigneſs and Strength exceeding his Kind, finding ſome of them ſtealing his Maſter's Roots, beat them away; which oblig'd thoſe ſubtle Creatures to come ſeveral together, the better to be able to encounter him; which *Quarll* having taken notice of, and being willing to add a new Sport to his uſual Diverſions, cuts a Stick of the Length and Bigneſs that the Creature could manage, which he gave him; and, taking his own Staff, exerciſes it before him, which did the ſame with his; and, apprehending what Uſe it was given him for, he had it often in his Hands, and with it drove away the others, when they came, tho' Ten or a Dozen together; ſo that the Roots were very well guarded, by his continual Watching; which made thoſe ſly and ſpightful Creatures watch an Opportunity to take him at a Diſadvantage: Thus finding him one Morning, as he was going for Water by himſelf, as he was wont to do, and being then without his Staff, of which they ſtood in great Fear, a conſiderable Number fell upon him, and ſo bit and beat him,

him, that he lay as dead; but his Maſter appearing, who, being uneaſy at his extraordinary Stay, was gone to ſee what was the Occaſion thereof, put them to the Flight; and they left the poor Creature with juſt Breath enough to keep its Life in, and ſcarce Strength ſufficient to draw it.

Quarll, being come to the Place where his beloved *Beaufidelle* lay in a moſt diſmal bloody Condition, could not forbear ſhedding Tears to ſee him thus miſerably dying; but, finding ſtill Breath in him, it gave him Hopes of his Recovery: And, taking him up in his Arms, with all the Care he could, he haſtens home, and gives him a little of the Liquor he had made, which by that time had got both Body and Spirit; then, having laid him upon its Bed, and cover'd him with his Winter-wrapper, he makes a Fire, and warms ſome of the ſaid Liquor, and freſh Butter, wherewith he waſhes its Sores; ſo lays him down again, giving him all the careful Attendance he could, during his Illneſs, which held but one Week; at the End of which it died, to his unſpeakable Grief; who, from that time, grew ſo melancholy, that he had not the Courage to go on with his Memorial; till, having a moſt remarkable Dream about twelve Months after, he changed his Reſolution, and proceeded in his Memoirs: And as he ſet down his Dream, he alſo did the Death of his beloved Beaſt, it happening near the ſame time.

Having ſpent the Year but dully, for want of his diverting Company at home; to put this as much out of his Mind as he could, he walk'd the ſpare Hours he had left from his uſual Occupation. Thus being one Day ſomewhat fatigued, having loſt his wonted Alacrity, he ſat down under the next Cluſter of Trees he came at; and, being in a dull Diſpoſition, was ſoon lull'd aſleep, at a loneſome Note of a certain ſort of melancholy Bird, which ſhuns

others

others Company (tho' of its own Kind) at all times but in Breeding-time; which, having placed itſelf in the thickeſt and ſhadieſt Part of the Grove, where *Quarll* had made choice to lie, falls a ſinging his melancholy Notes; which, being ſuitable to his Diſpoſition of both Body and Mind, ſoon lull'd him aſleep; during which he dream'd, that he ſaw an old Man ſitting in a large Circle, around which all the Signs of the Zodiac were, and the old Gentleman appear'd extreme buſy, ſtringing of ſmall Beads, ſome white, and ſome black; and, when he had ſtrung a certain Number, he began another String, and ſo on. He had the Curioſity to tell how many he put in a String, ſo keeps an Account of the next he did begin, and tells juſt 60: Having made as many of thoſe Strings as there were Beads in each, he puts them together, and begins again to ſtring, mixing white and black as they came to his Hand, twiſting every ſixtieth String in Parcels, till he had made ſixty of them, which he neatly plaits together, proceeding as from the Beginning, and makes 24 of thoſe Plaits, which he weaves together, making a flat Piece of Bead-work, changeable upon black, which, when look'd upon one Way, ſeem'd pleaſant; and, being ſeen from another, as diſagreeable. He work'd on till he had made three hundred and ſixty-four ſuch Pieces, then lays them up in a Bundle, and goes to Work again, beginning to ſtring as at firſt.

Having look'd himſelf weary with ſeeing ſtill the ſame, of which he could make nothing, he goes away leaving the old Gentleman ſtringing his Beads; who, ſeeing him go, lays by his Work, and follows him; and, having overtaken him, aſk'd him, What he had been looking at all that time? He, being ſurpris'd at the ſurly Queſtion, modeſtly replies, He had been admiring his Work; in doing which, he hop'd

hop'd there was no Offence. No, ſaid the old Man, provided thou learneſt ſomething by what thou haſt ſeen. To which he anſwer'd, It was impoſſible for him to learn ſuch a myſterious Buſineſs, with once ſeeing it done; ſo much leſs, being intirely a Stranger to it. A Stranger to it art thou? reply'd the old Man, in a ſurly Manner; and haſt waſted ſo much of my Work! I am TIME, whom thou haſt often ill-us'd; and thoſe white and black Beads, that thou haſt ſeen me ſtring, are good and bad Moments, I croud into Minutes, which I link into Hours; thus weave Days, wherewith Years are compos'd. Thou haſt ſeen me complete the preſent, which is reckon'd the Year 1713. I tell thee, before the enſuing is ended, I will grace the *Britiſh* Throne with an Illuſtrious Race to the End of Kings Reigns; ſo vaniſh'd. Then he awak'd in a great Surprize, and goes home, pondering on his Dream; of which he inferr'd, that if there be any Signification in the roving Conceptions of the Mind, this muk prognoſticate the ſpeedy Aſcenſion of ſome great Monarch upon the *Engliſh* Throne: So ſets down in his Memorial that moſt remarkable Dream, which happen'd in 1713. heartily wiſhing the Accompliſhment thereof, for the Quiet and Proſperity of his dear Country.

There happen'd nothing after, for the Space of four Years, but great Thunders and Lightnings in the Summer, and abundance of Hail and Snow in the Winter, with now and-then Storms, which left ſeveral Sorts of Fiſhes in the Clifts and Holes of the Rocks, and ſometimes Fragments of ſtaved Ships, and batter'd Caſks, or broken Cheſts, with a Plank, and ſuch-like Products of Shipwreck, not worth recording: By which means, for want of Employment, he has ſeveral idle and ſullen Hours in the Day-time, which his late beloved Animal's

divertsng

diverting Company made ſlip away with Pleaſure, and for want of which they now creep ſlowly on; being loaded with dull and heavy Thoughts, which made thoſe Walks irkſome, he at that time took for Eaſe; that, by the Diverſity of Objects abroad, his Mind might be withdrawn from his anxious Solitude.

Having one Day peruſed his Memorial, as he commonly did once a Year, the Dream had in 1713. wherein TIME predicted ſuch great Happineſs to his Country the Year enſuing, made ſuch an Impreſſion in his Mind, that he always thought of it. Accordingly, being walking, and the Day proving extraordinary hot, he goes to ſhelter himſelf in one of his natural Groves; where, having laid himſelf down on the Graſs, he was ſoon lull'd aſleep; during which, the Idea he had conceiv'd of his former Dream repreſented to his Imagination a moſt majeſtic and graceful Monarch, ſitting on a magnificent Throne, round which ſtood many delightful Olive-plants, which much added to his Luſtre.

Having, with a great deal of Pleaſure, gaz'd at the moſt graceful Countenance of the King, which denoted Juſtice, Equity, Love, and Clemency; he gave Heaven Thanks for the mighty Bleſſing beſtow'd on his Country, coming away, in order to return to his Iſland, with this additional Happineſs to the many he already enjoy'd.

Being come from Court, on his Journey he meets the ſame old Gentleman of whom he dream'd the Year before; who, taking him by the Hand, ſaid, I find thou haſt been to ſee the Accompliſhment of my Prediction: Now I'll tell thee more.

Ere One thouſand Seven hundred and Sixty is written,
All Diviſions, remember, will ceaſe in Great Britain.

Next,

Next, I will ſhew thee what I have done to ſecure the Accompliſhment of my Prophecy: Then takes him to a high Place, from whence he could ſee into the Cabinets of all the Princes in *Europe*; in ſeveral of which, he took notice, lay a vaſt Heap of rich and coſtly Things, but confus'd, ſhapeleſs, and fit for no Uſe: Now, ſaid the old Man to him, theſe are Diſappointments, and defeated Projects, made to intercept what I determined; then vaniſhes: At which he awak'd, exceeding glad to find himſelf ſafe in his bleſſed Iſland, and wonderfully pleas'd with his Dream, which betoken'd ſo much Good to his dear Country. This was the Concluſion of his Records in 1724.

ED. DORRINGTON.

F I N I S.

BOOKS Printed for, and Sold by, J. WREN, *near* Great Turn-Stile *in* Holborn; *and* J. JEFFERIES, *in* Ludgate-ſtreet.

Octavos.

THE Life of Chriſt and the Apoſtles, 2 Vols. By Dupin. Price 7*s.*

Carleton's Memoirs of the late War. Pr. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Memoirs of the Duke de Ripperda, 2d Edit. Pr. 5*s.*

The Prices of Bricklayers Materials and Work juſtly aſcertain'd. By Batty Langley. Pr. 6*s.*

The Canterbury Tales of Chaucer moderniz'd, publiſh'd by Mr. Ogle, 3 Vols. Pr. 10*s.* 6*d.*

The Miſcellaneous Works of Mr. John Toland, 2 Vols. Pr. 10*s.*

Poems on Several Occaſions, by Mr. Wm. Broome. Pr. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Dinſdale's Civil and Military Architecture, with Cuts. Pr. 5*s.*

Da Vinci on Painting, with Cuts. Pr. 5*s.*

Twelves.

A New Year's Gift; being the Young Servant's Guide, or Apprentice's Faithful Monitor. Pr. 1*s.*

Placette on Death, 2 Vols. tranſlated by Fenton. Pr. 5*s.*

The Travels, Voyages, and Adventures, of William Owen Gwin Vaughan, Eſq; 2 Vols. Pr. 5*s.*

Moffet on Foods, tranſlated by Dr. James. Pr. 3*s.*

Dacier's Homer, 5 Vols. with Cuts. Pr. 12*s.* 6*d.*

Tour through Great Britain, 4 Vols. Pr. 12*s.*

Journey with the Army in the Rebellion. Pr. 2*s.*

Behn's Novels, 2 Vols. Pr. 4*s.*

Orpheus, 3 Vols. Pr. 6*s.*

The Britiſh Regiſter, or the Hiſtory of England epitomiz'd, in three Parts; by way of Familiar Dialogues between a Tutor and Pupil; and embelliſh'd with the Heads of thirty Kings, *&c.* neatly engrav'd on Copper Plates. Price, bound and gilt, 9*d.*

The Moſaic Creation, or Divine Wiſdom diſplay'd in the Works of the Firſt Six Days; embelliſh'd with curious Copper Plates, neatly engrav'd, expreſſive of each Day. Price, bound and gilt, only 6*d.*